



For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

INTRODUCTION

“When Sire learned that Mishaka is practicing sorcery, he sent the guards to go and get her from her house. Mishaka was packing her things as fast as she could, her mother and father were very very scared for her. Mishaka was just an 18 year old girl with an extraordinary gift that no one could understand. She would go beyond the world of the living, to communicate with the world of the dead. She hugged her parents, they bid her farewell she was ready to go until she made it to the door and it was too late the guards were standing there ready to arrest her. She tried putting up a fight but couldn't, her mother pleaded and begged for her daughter's life but the guards were just following orders from the King. They took mishaka to the great white house, they threw her in the presence of the King and the Queen. Mishaka was crying pleading to Sire that she must let her go and she will leave Callanine and never to be heard of again. Sire stood up and said “witches are to be put to death and not shown any Mercy” he wanted to make an example to the whole Callanine by putting mishaka to death. Sire ordered the guards to put mishaka in prison for the time being and...”

I looked at her, my little beautiful sister she was already falling asleep. I tell her this story every night because it's important for her to know it.

Mishaka Versini is our great great ancestor, she had the gift of communicating with the world of the dead until the great King of our country burned her in front of everyone. Mishaka swore that even if the king can kill her, but he will never kill the gift that is gonna be passed to the next generation..

That was in the year 1800 when the incident occurred. When my mother was still alive, she used to tell me this story because she said "it is important for you to know it" i never understood why but today i do understand..

My name is Flare Versini, i am a descended of Mishaka Versini who was thought to be a witch and was put to death in the 1800. I live in a country known as "Callanine" which was founded and built in the 1800 before mishaka's death. The country is just a bit outside Africa and it was founded by King Edward-white the 1st. King Edward was originally from England, and because of his great travels he stumbled upon a Land that was green, productive and beautiful. That's when he decided to settle there, he built the country from scratch then named it "Callanine". Unlike any other countries, our country is governed by Kings and Queens it has been forever like this. It is a very developed and rich country with a population of +1000 people.

Today the country is governed by King Edward-white the 5th, and just like his great ancestors he also is intolerant of "sorcery".

I watched her ordering the guards to burn my mother when i was just a little girl because she was thought to be practicing sorcery too. I wish that Sire could understand the gift that my family possess and allow people like us to live free in his country. No one knows that i have the gift too, because I don't want Sire finding out and putting me to death, i cannot leave my sister Zoe alone she's just 5 Years old. I fear for Zoe's future because when she grows up, she will possess the gift too and if she doesn't Have control of it, Sire might put

her to death too..

I live with my sister, just the two of us I'm literally taking care of her because we don't have parents and we the only family we have..

I am 21 years old and i am a servant in the great white house, how ironic. The king doesn't know that i come from the Versini family, or otherwise he would've long put me to death. According to him there is no descent from the Versini family that is still alive..

Sire hates my family with all his heart.

I AM FLARE VERSINI, AND MY STORY HAS JUST BEGUN”

PART 1 LET ME IN: CURSE OF AN ANCIENT SPIRIT

I woke up at 4am to prepare for the day ahead. I always wake up this early to prepare everything before i make my way to the white house..

I went to the kitchen to make coffee for Charlie and his colleague..

Ohh Charlie thou art sweet. he is the sweetest person i know and we have been friends for as long as i could remember.

Charlie cleans chimneys around the neighbourhood that's how he earns his living. He makes good money because all our houses have fire places.

It's not big houses just the kitchen, lounge, 1 bedroom, and a bathroom..

They pass by my house at around 4:15 and by then I'm already standing at the gate with 2 Cups of coffee and 2 muffins for each of them....

I made the coffee and poured them on the styrofoam cups then took the muffins and i went to wait for them by the gate..

I saw them coming from down the street..

Charlie is 25 years old and lives alone, he doesn't have anyone to cook for him so i let him come and eat with us every now and then.. They finally reached me while holding their equipment.

Charlie: best coffee in town

I smiled as i handed them the cups with coffee..

Me: You only saying that because you want more coffee

Charlie: Thank you very much, and I'm saying that because it's true. His colleague took a bite of the muffin.

Him: This are really good muffins Me: Thank you Simon

Simon and Charlie have been friends and colleagues for a

long time now..

When they started this chimney cleaning Business, it was the 3 of them now it's only the two of them i think their other friend quit or something..

Simon: Thank you very much flare Me: You welcome

Simon: Unfortunately we have to go to work now Me: have a lovely day

Charlie: You too

They started walking away while waving goodbye at me.... As i was standing there i saw their friend the one I thought quit.. He was walking very slow probably trying to catch up with them because he was holding his own equipment that he uses to clean the chimneys with..

I waited for him to reach where i was standing, so i could ask why his walking so slow.. He slowly approached me.

Me: You won't catch up with them if you walking that slow

He stood where i was standing and stretched out his hand to me.

Me: i didn't make you any coffee or muffins because i thought you quit..

He didn't say anything, he still stretched his hand towards me with his eyes glued at me.. He wasn't saying anything and that was just starting to creep me out.

He was very wet, more like he was rained upon and what was more funny was that it didn't rain today..

Me: I'm just gonna go inside because you really creeping me out..

I walked back in while leaving him standing there. I locked the door behind me and stood there thinking to myself that i must really ask Charlie about this friends of his who is creepy...

I went to take a bath quickly because i didn't wanna arrive late at the White House..

After bathing, i went to the bedroom and got dressed.. I

packed Zoe's uniform and the clothes that she gonna need when she gets back from school..

There's a very kind woman living next door Mrs Francina she helps me alot with Zoe.. Everytime before i leave for work i drop Zoe off next door then she would bath her and walk her to school. When school is out, she would fetch her and babysit her for me until i knock off..

I woke Zoe up..

Me: Come on sweetheart we have to go

She got up and out of bed while rubbing her eyes.. She put on her sleepers then we walked next door....

We got next door and i rang the bell.. I looked at my wrist watch and it was 5:20 I have to beat the White House Exactly at 6:00am..

Mrs Francina opened the door, she was coughing she looked a bit sick.. Me: Good morning Mrs Francina

Her: Good morning Flare She smiled at Zoe

Her: And Hello Miss Zoe Zoe: Hello

She invited us in, but i couldn't stay i didn't wanna be late for work.. I put Zoe's things on the table..

Mrs Francina's was beautiful and very clean. Her furniture was old but it still looked good. Me: Are you alright Mrs Francina?

Her: i am fine, i just caught the cold

Me: That's a horrible cough that you have

Her: i went to the doctor yesterday he gave me alot of pills

so i should be fine.. Me: Are you sure that you will be able to look after Zoe?

Her: Go to work darling, me and Zoe we'll be fine ain't that right Miss Zoe? Zoe nodded her head.

I hugged Zoe..

Me: I'll see you when i get back from work okay? Her: Okay

Me: i love you

Her: i love you too..

Mrs Francina kept on coughing

Me: Mrs Francina are you sure that you okay?

Her: I'm fine darling.. Zoe take your things to the bedroom

Zoe took her things to the bedroom.

Me: When did you catch the cold? Her: a few days ago

Me: But you looked fine yesterday Her: i know but...

I heard Zoe screaming in the bedroom.. Me: Zoe? I rushed to the bedroom and what i saw almost made me faint.. Mrs Francina was sleeping in bed.

Shit! That means she's dead and she doesn't know it yet.. I knelt down and looked at Zoe, she was scared

Her: Why are the two Mrs Francina's? Me: You saw both of them?

She nodded her head yes..

Me: You saw Mrs Francina at the kitchen? She nodded yes.. That was weird i only came to realise my gift when i was 18, how is possible that Zoe can see earthbound spirits so soon. She's still young i mean we all came to realise our gift when we were 18 including my mother and Mishaka, how is it possible that Zoe came to realise hers so early..

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**

PART 2

I had called the morgue people, they came to take her body and i contacted her family as well to let them know about this situation. I couldn't stay to oversee everything i had to take Zoe to school, then go back to the white house..i had contacted Charlie to fetch her for me after school and he agreed. I had spoken to her that she shouldn't breath a word to anyone about the Francina situation and she agreed.

I got to the white house at 7am,i was busy praying that i don't loose my job. On my way upstairs i was met by Princess Sophia.

Her: Good heavens Flare where have you been?

Me: Please forgive me my Princess i had an emergency to attend too Her: Come quick before mother sees you.

She held my hand and we went to her bedroom.

The Queen and the King were blessed with two children.

Princess Sophia and Prince Clive, they Fraternal twins..

Prince Clive hasn't been home in a very long time, he is overseas studying... Me: Did her majesty notice that i am not around?

Her: No she's held up

The Princess looked very down like something was bothering her, she wasn't her bubbly self.

Me: Is everything okay? Her: No

Me: What's wrong? Her: Father is very sick

Me: He is not getting better?

The king has been sick for a week now, it started off as a mere fever then after that he couldn't get out of bed, he is bed bound..

The Queen came in as we were sitting there.. Her: flare I've been looking all over for you!

I stood up

Me: forgive me your highness i was..

Sophia: Its all my fault, I've had her run errands for me this morning.. The Princess is very fond of me.

Queen: would you please prepare warm water for me in a basin, then take them to the bedroom with clean towels..

Me: Yes your highness..

Her: You basically the only servant that i trust in this house, i would like you to take care of the king until Miraldo gets here

Sophia: Miraldo?

Queen: She's a healer

Sophia: What happened to Dr haze?

Queen: all this Western medicine is not helping we have to try other things. Miraldo is a trusted healer we need to give her a chance

Sophia: Whatever mom

She stood up and Walked to the door.. Queen: You can go ahead flare

Me: Yes your highness.

I went to the Queen's bedroom and the King was in bed he looked grave sick..... I went to the bathroom and got some towels with water and went to the King.. He was unconscious, and burning up..

I wet the towel and put it on his forehead..

I seriously wondered what was wrong with the king..

As i was busy humming a song and trying to tone down the fever, i heard someone talking.

Voice: How is he?

I turned back and there stood a very beautiful woman. She was wearing a very dark blue dress, her hair was covered with a blue doek, and she had a weird looking necklace around her neck. She had beautiful blue eyes and didn't look old she probably was in her 30s,she was holding a brief case..

Me: His still burning up

She came closer and put her hand on his forehead.. Her: he is not good

Her accent was off, she sounded foreign.. The Queen walked in....

Queen: Can you help him?

The Queen was very worried, i can also see that she hasn't been sleeping well.. The lady looked at the queen..

Her: This is a...critical case but i shall try malady Queen:

Please Miraldo you are my only hope Her: i will do my best..

Something didn't seem right with this woman, her bag had some heaviness in it as if like there's something sinister inside of it...

Miraldo: i would ask everyone to clear the room, as i work on the king. The Queen started walking away and i stood there, she looked at me.. Her: i mean everyone

Me: forgive me but i cannot leave Sire's side The Queen stopped and looked at me

Her: Its okay Flare come along Me: Yes your highness

Me and the Queen went out to the kitchen.. Me: Can i make you some tea your highness? Her: Yes please

I went to make her tea. I wouldn't say the Queen hates me and I wouldn't say she likes me either, let's say she tolerates me..

Her: When you done you can go and check up on Sophia, she seemed pretty upset Me: Yes your highness

I made her tea and gave it to her.. Her: Thank you flare

Me: Its my pleasure Your highness.. I'll go and check up on Princess Sophia Her: Before that, can you please go to my son's room and clean his coming back home tonight and i want him to find his room clean..

Me: Yes your highness

I walked upstairs to Prince Clive's room to clean it.. But before i went there, I decided to go to the King's room just to check what's happening..

I didn't open the door, i just put my ear and listen through the door..

It was very quiet, i didn't hear anything... As i was trying to eavesdrop the door opened and i fell in..

Miraldo: May i help you child?

Her eyes had changed colour from Blue to black.. Me: No.. I'm.. I

I stood up and went out.. Me: I'm sorry

She closed the door...

I swear there's something sinister about this woman..

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

PART 3

I cleaned the Prince's room as he was gonna arrive tonight. I changed the bed linen and made sure that i thoroughly clean all the dusty places...

It took me about 2hours to get everything clean, Yeap that's how Queen Jacobeth wanted everything done around the house, and that is spotless...

She came in as i was finishing up.. Her: it smells great in here

Me: Thank you your highness

She walked around checking everything.. Her: You did a very good job Flare

Me: Thank you your highness.

If it was Sire, he would politely say "why should you be thanked for doing your job" She sat down on the bed..

Him: i haven't seen my son Prince Clive for years now.

As much as i would wanna know all the details behind that statement but, you never ask for clarity or ask about the family matters of the Royal house unless they volunteer to tell you..

Her: i think Princess Sophia is waiting for her lunch would you please see to that.. Me: Yes your highness.. Would her majesty like anything to eat too?

Her: i would like some ice tea please Me: I'll bring it to you..

You never look the king or the Queen right in the eye.. When you talk to them you must look down with your hands nicely placed at the back..

I walked out of the Prince's room and went to the kitchen to prepare lunch for the Princess..

The Princess is very picky when it comes to eating, she always prefers to eat healthy.. In the morning she eats Musli with yoghurt and a fruit salad. Lunchtime she eats what she calls a "healthy sandwich". It's bread with low fat spread, lettuce with cucumber, sliced tomato and cheese.. She

would have that with Ice tea..

After preparing her lunch i took it to her bedroom...

I didn't know because she wasn't gonna hear me, she was playing the piano and singing, she has the most beautiful voice ever..

Me: Princess Sophia i have made you lunch

She stopped playing, then went to sit on her couch as i brought her the trolley with her lunch..

Her: How is father doing?

Me: He was still the same when i left him with Miraldo Her: How is she with him?

Me: i don't know because she requested everyone to get out of Sire's room Sophia: We need to go and check on my father..

Me: You eat I'll go and check up on him

Her: Thank you Flare, i don't know what I'll do without you I smiled and went out to check on the king...

I got to the door of his bedroom and knocked, in case Miraldo was still in there.. No one said "Come in" so i opened the door and went inside.

Miraldo was not around, and Sire was laying in bed he still looked the same..

I walked over to check up on him then as i got closer i heard this loud scream, it was more like a child screaming..it was very loud and very sharp in my ears that i had to close them..

I couldn't see where the scream was coming from, it was as if like it was everywhere in the room.. I closed my eyes and my ears it was very very very intense i thought i was gonna collapse because it was also making me dizzy...

Someone touched me on my shoulder and i jumped, i checked who it was and it was Miraldo, suddenly it was quiet. I took my hands off my ears, and noticed some blood on them..

Her: Your ears are bleeding child.. She got a cloth and gave it

to me..

She then looked at me as if like she's waiting for me to say something.. Her: You heard the screaming doll!

I kept quiet..

Her: Not everyone can hear the screaming doll unless you are.. She looked at me all smiling.

Me: i have to go

I walked up to the door and exited.. I was still feeling a bit dizzy and i had a terrible headache..

I went into the guest room and washed off the blood from my hands, the bleeding from my ears had stopped..

I looked at myself in the mirror, thinking of the scream that i heard...

Alot of questions ran through my mind what Is the screaming doll? Why did i only hear the scream when i got closer to the King? Who else can hear the scream? What did Miraldo mean when she said i heard the screaming doll? All those questions and i had no one to answer them..

I was done with all my duties at around 18:00 the Queen said it's fine i can go home.. The Prince was still on his way pity i won't be around when he arrives but I'm pretty sure I'll see him tomorrow..

I got to Charlie's place and Zoe was watching Tv while Charlie was cooking.

Me: Thank you soo much Charlie for helping me with Zoe

Him: You are welcome, sit down I'm making some chilli soup would you like some?

I would really like to stay but, i have to go home and prepare everything for tomorrow Charlie: Please just have one bowl of soup you deserve it..

I sat down and he dished up for me, chilli soup and rolls..

Me: Thank you

Him: So what is happening in the Royal house? Me: Nothing

much, the King is grave sick though I couldn't tell him all the details..

Me: And how was work on your side? Him: Was dusty and dirty

I laughed..

Me: I'm gonna need you to help me with Zoe again tomorrow Him: No problem

Charlie is such an Angel...

After eating, i got Zoe's things then said my goodbyes to Charlie and we left.

It was a bit windy as we were walking to our place, at least we don't live that far from Charlie's place.

Me: How was Charlie's place? Her: Fun

Me: Did you enjoy staying there? Her: Yeap

Me: I'm glad..

As we were walking my scarf fell, and it was busy being blown by the wind as i was running to catch it with Zoe running after me..

Zoe: Wait for me Me: Run..

As i was running to pick it up, it rolled up on someone's leg.. He bent and picked it up for me..

He stretched his hand out to me.. Him: i believe this is yours Malady

I looked at him, Ohh my word i could just die there.. I have never seen such perfection. It was like God took his time in creating this human being of a male standing in front of me.. He had the most beautiful smile too and his teeth were very white like he bleached them or something..

He was with two men, looked like his bodyguards or something.. I took my scarf..

Me: Th.. Thank you..

His eyes, you could just lose yourself in them...

He was wearing a white tshirt, blue jeans that he folded at the bottom, white sneakers and a white jacket.

One of the bodyguards whispered into his ear.... He then smiled and looked at me Him: make sure you keep your scarf safe malady..

After saying that they went into a car that was parked not far from were we were standing.. Zoe Finally caught up with me, she was breathing heavy..

I watched that black Mercedes-Benz as it drove off wondering who could that be..

PART 4

I got home and bathe Zoe, after bathing her i put her straight to bed.. When i was done with her, i also bathe then put on my night gown and had me some cup of tea while sitting at the kitchen and thinking..

There was alot that was going through my mind, especially this Miraldo person and the screaming doll just alot of things didn't make sense and i need answers..

As i was sitting there, i remembered that when i was young, my mother used to Conjure spirits(ghosts) from the world of the dead in hopes of finding answers to certain questions...

I stood up and went to the bedroom to get her things that she used to use...

The box was dirty, since the day she died i never went through her things i just put them away...

I put the box ontop of the table at the kitchen and went through it..

I found crystals, Candles, a certain black powder, the Ouja board, and the book of spells..

What was she doing with the book of spells???

I went through it and it was written in a language that i didn't know, but was also translated in English..

The book was old, which proved that it had been used for centuries..

I landed on a certain chapter that had a necklace which had a small crystal stone.. I went through the chapter and it was Talking about "The screaming doll" what are the odds?

Each chapter in the book talked about a different topic and the wasn't alot that was written just a paragraph.

I went on to read about the screaming doll..

Me: "The screaming doll is a powerful black magic spell that was used by Ancient Evil witches. They used the screaming doll spell to paralyse their Enemies and strip them of all their powers and authority. Most of the Time the screaming doll

spell sucks out the life of their Enemies. Not everyone can hear the screaming doll, only the chosen ones can”

This just doesn’t make sense at all especially the “chosen ones” what are the “chosen ones”??

I went on to read..

Me: “most people who heard the screaming doll would wear the crystal necklace around their necks to block out the powerful and sharp scream of the screaming doll”..

Okay i put on the crystal necklace around my neck.. I went on to read.

Me: “another way of protecting yourself from the screaming doll spell is to sprinkle the black powder around your house, those who mean you harm will not be able to enter your house”

That gave me an idea. I heard the screaming doll In Sire’s room meaning that there’s someone who means to harm the king, and i cannot think of anyone else other than Miraldo.

Tomorrow when i get to the Royal house, i shall sprinkle the black powder around his room, if Miraldo refuses to enter that means she’s the one who wants to harm the king..

I went on to read the part about conjuring a spirit, but it confused me alot or maybe i was too tired to read with concentration and understanding...

I put back everything in the box and went to put it back where i had found it, but i kept the powder and necklace then i went to bed.

The following morning, i woke up and did the usual. Made coffee for Charlie and his friend and waited for them at the gate.. His 3rd Friend that always walked slow following them still gave me the creeps i must truly ask Charlie about this friend of his...

After giving them i went back to the house and prepared Zoe for school, and then i prepared myself for work.. Charlie is to fetch Zoe at 6:00am and walk her to school while i go to

work..

Zoe's school starts exactly at 7:00am so Charlie is to keep her company until school starts..

I am very grateful to have Charlie in our lives his an Angel on earth.. When Charlie and Zoe left fur school, i made my way to the Royal house.

I got in and the guards let me in, and i went to start with my daily chores and that is preparing breakfast for everyone..

Before I left home, i had taken some of the black powder and i wore the crystal necklace around my neck..

I started preparing breakfast for everyone, it won't take me that long because they not fussy especially Princess Sophia with her Musli and fruit salad...

As i was busy at the kitchen, i heard someone coming in they were talking. I checked who it was and it was the guy who got me my scarf last night.. He was shirtless just wearing a short and sneakers, he was on his phone.. Our eyes met, i think he was also shocked to see me..

I quickly broke the eye contact and concentrated on what i was doing which was very difficult which such presence filling up the room..

Him: Didn't we meet yesterday? Me: uhm i believe we did

Him: The scarf incident? Me: Yes

Him: Ahaaaa! I remember

He took one of the Strawberries that i was cutting and put it in his mouth..

I was praying that he leaves the room already his just making me very nervous, I'm even Shaking tgaryi accidentally cut myself..

Me: Ouch!!

Him: What happened? Me: i cut myself

I went to the sink and turned on the tap then ran my bloody finger under the water.. I saw him coming up to me, Ohhh Lord what does he want????

He turned off the tap then took a cloth.. Him: May i?
I nodded my head, i was mostly looking down trying to avoid eye contact I'll probably die if i look him in the eye...
He took my finger and rolled the cloth around it and pressed very hard, i closed my eyes..
Him: painful? Me: Just a bit Him: I'm sorry..
The Queen walked in, i quickly loosed my hand from his grip.. Queen: Ohhh uhm i see you guys have already met..
Him: Not really
Queen: That's Flare our servant, and Flare this is My son Prince Clive Ohhh my Lord, he is the Prince..
Him: So you are Flare, I've heard alot about you from my sister I didn't know what to say, i looked down..
Queen: Flare please check on the king, clean the bedroom before Miraldo attends to him
Me: Yes your highness
I started walking away, and heard her talking behind me..
Queen: What are you doing with a servant? You a Prince, soon to be King! I didn't hear him answering, i was already halfway to the bedroom..
My finger was still bleeding so i just put it in my mouth and sucked the blood..
Sire was getting very bad, he looked pale like something was sucking the life out of him.. As i got closer i couldn't hear the screaming doll, i looked at the crystal necklace around my neck and it was glowing..
I put my hand on his forehead, he was still burning up..
I went to the door and locked then i started sprinkling the powder all around his bedroom on the carpet.. Lucky for me the carpet was grayish so you couldn't see the powder..
The crystal necklace only glowed when i got close to sire, but when I'm far from him it didn't glow...
I went to the bathroom and got the towels with water, the bedroom looked clean i don't what the Queen was talking

about that i should clean it..

The door opened as i was putting the towel in the water, it was Miraldo.. She stood at the door couldn't come in..

Me: Are you okay Miraldo? She looked at me

Her: Why wouldn't i be?

Me: You can come and check Sire She looked down at the carpet.

Her: i think I'll come back later when the room has been cleaned Me: i just finished cleaning it..

She looked at me..

Her: Protection of the Black powder, well played

Me: Well you should come in, you mean the king no harm right?

She looked at me with a smirk on her face, she couldn't say anything..

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**

PART 5

I really wanted her to enter but she didn't, she stood there. I then saw the Queen coming in, passing Miraldo at the door..

Queen: Miraldo do you wanna work on the king? Miraldo: Yes your highness, if that's not much trouble

Queen: Ofcourse not, please come in and we'll give you your space. I stood there waiting to see if she's gonna come in.

Miraldo: Your highness i would like the room to be vacuumed if it's not much trouble Queen: uhm i thought Flare already did that

Miraldo: i doubt she did because i still smell the dust and it's giving me bad sinuses The Queen looked at me..

Me: Forgive me your highness i will get to it..

I went to get the Vacuum and started vacuuming the carpet. She made me Vacuum it twice...

At least now i know that Miraldo is the one who wanna cause harm to the King, the question is Why would she wanna harm the king? And that is what i need to find out..

After vacuuming, i went to Princess Sophia, had to accompany her to the mall she needed to get a few things..

We went to her car, and the Chauffeur drove us to the mall..

Her: How is Father doing today?

Me: His health is not good my Princess, his getting worse She looked at her fingers..

Her: i wish Mother Could just stop with this Herbs and take Father to the hospital. Me: I'm sure she will consider that.

We got to the mall and she started doing her shopping, she was shopping for clothes...

I enjoy spending time with the Princess, she's the closet thing i have to a friend. She's very fond of me, and I'm very fond of her too..

She bought a few things, then we went to eat at some

restaurant and we just had fun at the mall..

Her: i wish this bodyguards Could give us some space to breath though I laughed

Me: Well they have to keep you safe. You are the King's daughter after all.. Her: Its not as glamorous as you think it is..

After our girls outing we drove back home because i needed to attend to my chores at the Royal house..

We got to the house and we were summoned to the King's room with immediate effect.. We got there and i was surprised to see the king sitting up straight. He looked better you would deny that he was in a coma. He was sitting in straight with a pillow supporting his back and the Queen was feeding him.. Miraldo was there as well as the Prince. Sophia went up to the King and hugged her..

Sophia: i was so worried about you Father, i thought you were never gonna make it King: i will never leave you Princess..

That was a speedy recovery, i wonder what happened??

Prince: that was a speedy recovery

The Prince took the words right out of my mouth. Queen: All thanks to Miraldo

Prince: Miraldo?

King: Miraldo found a doll under my bed.. Someone had cast the screaming doll spell on me that's why i was so sick

Queen: Miraldo i don't even know what to say or how to repay you Miraldo: the is a way on how you can repay me

King: Name anything

Miraldo: it would be such a great honour for me to continue living in this house and be the King's healer

The Queen and the King looked at each other. Queen: i don't see any problem with that

King: Yes plus, you saved my life after all..

Miraldo: Thank you, now if I'm not being rude can we give Sire some space he needs to relax Queen: Ofcourse..

The Queen kissed the king on the forehead and we all went out.. Queen: Flare

Me: Yes your highness?

Her: Please start preparing lunch for everyone, the Prince eats those greasy food like a hamburger, pizza living in America has made him to eat weird food

Me: Yes your highness

Her: Then prepare Healthy sandwiches for everyone and Ice tea Me: I'll get right to it your highness

Her: Thank you..

I smiled and went to the kitchen to start with the lunch.. I started preparing lunch first for the Prince because his lunch was gonna require alot of things..

As i was busy preparing a hamburger for the Prince, Miraldo came into the kitchen.. Me: How did you pull that?

Her: I'm a witch, i know every trick

Me: Why do you wanna cause the king harm?

Her: my mother was a witch, as soon as the king caught her practicing sorcery he put her to death, i am here to avenge my mother..

Me: i will not let you harm the king

Her: Stay out of my way young girl, if you know what's good for you Me: If you harm the king i will expose you!

She laughed..

Me: I'm the one who found the "screaming doll" remember? I'm the one who saved the King's life, so do you think they will believe you over me? I mean you are just a mere servant I looked at her..

Her: You should be teaming up with me because you and i we off the same kind, and you know our kind will never be accepted here

Me: I'm not a witch!

She looked at me and smiled.. Her: Very well..

She started walking away..

Her: i eat soft porridge for lunch please make me one

She walked away.. I swear i must really look into this Miraldo person. When i was done preparing lunch for the Prince, i took it to him.. He was at the basket ball court shooting hoops..

Being in his presence will forever make me nervous, his presence was heavy on Me, the authority he has sends shivers down my spine..

I put the tray in one of the chairs, and cleared my throat.. He turned and looked at me..

I was all looking down, couldn't look him in the eye.. Me: Your lunch is ready my Prince

Him: Please address me as Clive

He then came to eat. His body was very sexy, he had a tattoo on his chest.. Me: i should get back to my chores

Him: No, please keep me company Me: i have alot to do

Him: There's other helpers I'm sure they can pick up where you've left off Me: I'm the only who prepares food for the Royal house

Him: You work yourself too much, you need a break.. Me: I'm sorry my Pri.. I mean Clive i really have to go I started walking away..

Him: I'm the Prince, you cannot disobey Me. Now I'm asking you to keep me company while i eat and that is a direct command..

I stopped then turned around and went to him...we both sat down. He cut the burger in half. Him: This is yours

Me: No thank you I'm fine Him: That was a command

Eish all this commands.. I took half of the burger and took a small bite, i was very very scared of being in the presence of the Prince, i wished that the ground could open up and swallow me..

PART 6

The Prince and i ate together while talking, i was starting to get a bit comfortable around him. He was a real sweet person and very talkative, just by talking to him for a minute i could already make out what kind of a person he is..

Him: So that's just me playing Pro ball In the United States, having alot of black friends and just enjoying life..

Me: So you never went abroad to study? I still couldn't look him in the eye..

Him: No F that, my parents thought i went there to study and believe you Me i did, but after a year i fell in love with basket ball and i didn't waste anytime i made it a career..

Me: F that?

Him: That's a word you probably shouldn't know Me: Okay

Him: Anything interesting i should know about you? I shook my head no..

He was very different, i mean his family is well respected and feared. They educated they disciplined and his more like the black sheep of the family..

Him: You not hungry? Me: Why?

Him: You hardly ate your burger, and it wasn't even a full portion Me: i...

I couldn't eat infront of him, was just too nerve wrecking..

His mother walked In, she couldn't really believe that i was standing there sharing a meal with her son..

Queen: Flare we have been waiting for our lunch and you here socialising? Me: I'm very sorry your highness

Queen: Why are you acting like this? You a servant in this house and your duties are to serve us! Do you know that there's girls lining up waiting to take your spot? Girls who are probably gonna do a better job than you?

Me: Please forgive me your highness

I was looking down, trying my hardest to address her politely and make her feel the remorse in my voice..

Prince: Mom it's all my fault, I actually asked her to keep me company

Queen: Clive i thought we talked about this? Have you even returned Princess?

Maxima's phone calls? Him: No

Her: i suggest you get to it, you know her and her father are coming over this weekend

Him: Yes your highness

Queen: am i sensing mockery in your statement? Him: just trying to show respect like everyone else He held my hand and kissed it..

Him: Thank you for the lunch malady I quickly got my hand off his grip..

He took it his ball and went out while bouncing it..

The Queen came closer to me, out of nowhere she slapped me..

Her: have you no shame? After everything that my family is doing for you this is how you thank us?

I didn't say anything just put my hand were she had slapped me..

Her: I forbid you from seeing my son, or serving or doing anything for him! If he gets in a room you go out do you hear me?

Me: Yes your highness

Her: Now i am willing to let this go, Get back to what we pay you to do! Me: Yes your highness

As i started walking she grabbed my arm..

Her: Don't forget you are nothing but a servant! My son will never love you.. Do you know what the king can do to you if he heard about this?

Me: Please don't tell him your highness, it will never happen

Her: My son is supposed to Marry Princess Maxima of the

Netherlands and I'm not gonna have you distract him!
I have always known the king to be vicious, but i didn't expect this from the Queen.. Her: Look at your skin colour, and look at our skin it can never work!

Tears were very close to falling.. Her: Now get out of my sight!

I turned around and Walked out, tears fell i was very heartbroken, shattered to be exact.. Being a servant is the hardest thing ever you literally have to take what people throw at you and run with it.

I got to the kitchen and started preparing lunch, i couldn't stop the tears from falling.

At 18:00 i was done with everything, i took my things and Walked to the door.. As soon as i opened the door i bumped into the Prince.. He had been out for the rest of the day.. I couldn't restrain my heart from beating way too fast.

I stepped back and allowed him to walk in.. He stepped back too and made way for me... Me: You can come in Prince Clive

Him: How did we go back to that?

Me: You are the Prince and I'm just a servant, i should always address you with respect..

He leaned on the door..

Him: What did my mother say?

I didn't say anything.. I wanted to go before the Queen walk in on us again.. Him: Can i at least walk you home?

Me: i don't think that would be appropriate Him: a lady shouldn't walk home alone at night

Me: Its just 18:00 I'm sure I'll be fine..

Even if you can face the other way or face down, but if someone is starring at you, you can feel it. You can actually feel the hair at the back of your neck stand up.. Me: i started walking out and he blocked my way..

Me: Please i don't want trouble

He slowly stepped out of my way, and i Walked out as fast as i could.

It didn't take me that long to get to Charlie's place, i found him playing Dominos with Zoe..

Charlie: Look whose back

Zoe ran up to me, and i picked her up.. Me: Did you have a good time?

Her: Yes i did

Me: Charlie thank you very much Him: Don't mention it

Zoe: Uncle Charlie? Charlie: Yes my Angel?

Zoe: Your friend said his cold Charlie: Simon?

Zoe: No the one that was following us when you and Simon were walking me to school.

Charlie: What are you saying Zoe?

Zoe: When you dropped Me off at the gate i waited for him to catch up with me, he is wet and he said his cold..

Ohw Lord this is what i feared..

PART 7

I put Zoe down, and i looked at her.

Me: Sweety you know that you not supposed to talk about this

Her: But it's true i saw him, he said his cold and he wants Charlie to find him because it's cold where he is...

Me: Zoe stop it now!! (shouting)

Zoe: Its True why won't you believe me? I shook her a little..

Me: Stop it!! (shouting)

She couldn't believe that i just snapped at her, i also couldn't believe that i snapped at her.. I removed my hands from her.

Charlie: Zoe go to the lounge Princess and watch TV for a while
Zoe: Okay

She walked to the lounge..

Charlie: Sit down I'll make you some tea

I sat down and he made me a cup of tea, then sat opposite me. He held my hand..

Him: What is going on Flare? Tears fell from my eyes..

Him: We have been friends for a long time Flare, you can talk to me..

Charlie has been my friend for a long time, and i trust him. I even trust him with my life.. Me: Zoe and i we.. We see

Ghosts

He looked at me dumbfounded..

Me: i came to realise my gift when i was 18, all of us we came to realize our dream when we were 18 i don't know why Zoe came to realise hers now so early.. Him: All of you?

Me: i am the descendant of the great Mishaka Versini His eyes popped out..

Him: The great Mishaka that was put to death because of..

Me: Yes..

Him: Wow.. I didn't know that you from the Versini clan

Me: Yeap i come from that family, and if the king finds out i..

Him: Hey don't talk like that.. The king will never find out. I'll make sure that you and Zoe are protected at all times

I smiled at him, the ever soo sweet Charlie.. Him: So Zoe did see my colleague?

Me: Yes.. I'm sorry but i think his dead Charlie He didn't look shock at all..

Him: i know Me: You know?

Him: He was murdered a year ago Me: That's terrible by who?

Him: He was at the bar drinking, i think he drank alot and started harassing some lady.. Then the lady's boyfriend fought with him and murdered him..

Me: Wow!..

Him: His body was never found, i don't know where they put it

Me: i think he wants peace or his body to be found.. Judging from his state i think his somewhere in the water

Charlie: You think so? Me: Yes

Charlie: So how do we help him cross over?

Me: i don't know..I have never helped a ghost to cross over. I've seen Ghosts but i have never helped them to cross over..

Him: So his doomed here? I don't think he belongs into the world of the living you have to help me help him cross over..

Me: You sound like you don't want his spirit roaming around here He looked down

Me: Charlie what's going on? He took a deep breath..

Him: He haunts us Flare, me and Simon.. He asks why we never saved him because we were his friends

Me: You see him? Him: at times..

Me: I'm sorry Charlie

Him: Can you help me? Is there something we can do?

Me: uhm i.. I read in my mom's book of spells about conjuring a spirit.. We can do it tonight at my house

Charlie: i think we can go Me: Ya let's go

We took Zoe and left...

.
.

We got to my house and i bathe Zoe then put her to sleep..I didn't want her to see what we were about to do, it was gonna be traumatic for her she's too young and she will never understand..

When i was done putting Zoe in bed, i took my mom's things and we went to the lounge.. We shifted the table and chairs then started with everything....

We followed the instructions on the book, we drew a triangle on the wooden floor with a white chalk..

We then put candles on all 3 corners of the triangle, then we put crystals In the middle of the triangle..

We poured some white powder around the triangle and we also drew a circle inside the triangle where the apparition has to appear..

I also put on the crystal necklace around my neck as it was a critical part of the process.. We then sat around the triangle and i read out the spell..

"i come before thee in the world of the dead, bring forth the spirit of the one that is no more" The crystals have to brighten but they didn't.. I tried and tried but nothing happened.. Charlie: Are you sure you read right?

Me: Yes i did

Him: That's a disappointment

Me: Maybe we should try again tomorrow

Him: Okay..in that case let me go I'll see you tomorrow. Me: Okay

I walked him to the door, he gave me a hug Him: take care

Me: You too

He walked away and i closed the door, i stood there facing the door for a while thinking of why the spell didn't work..

All a sudden i felt some coldness and the hairs at the back of

my neck stood up, as if like someone was staring at me...

I then heard a voice.. Voice: "Let Me In"

The voice got closer and closer.. And i heard it right next to my ear o freaked out i turned around and there wasn't anyone there....

I walked up to the lounge and the crystals have brightened and where moving around in the triangle, i won't lie i was scared..

PART 8

I was now in bed sleeping peacefully. I had returned everything back into my mom's box..

What happened scared me a bit, if i wasn't used to ghosts I'd probably wasn't even gonna be able to sleep..

As i was sleeping i started feeling very cold, the atmosphere was just too icy that i woke and realised that the window was open.. I got up and went to close it, was weird because we don't open the windows especially this days because it's cold.. After closing the window i went back to bed and realised that Zoe wasn't next to me.. Me: Zoe..

Zoe is not the kind of person that just gets out bed in the middle of the night, she's scares easily and she's afraid of the dark she wakes me up even if she wants to go to the toilet at night. So for her to be up was just weird..

I wore my sleepers and went to look for her, i started at the bathroom first and she wasn't there then i went to the other rooms of the house...

I found her in the lounge, she was just standing in the middle of the room not moving an inch it was almost as if like she was frozen or something..

Me: Zoe??

I moved closer to her she didn't move at all..

I went up to her and looked at her, her eyes were closed...

Me: Zoe can you hear me?

I put my hand on her shoulder, she was cold as ice.. Me: You soo cold..

As soon as o put my other hand on her shoulder she lost it, she was screaming and trying to scratch me..

Me: Zoe stop it!

She still had her eyes closed, so i started Shaking her until she opened her eyes and she just hugged me...she was

trembling with fear she was scared and crying she didn't wanna let me go..

Me: What's wrong? What did you see?

She couldn't say anything, she was just scared.. I picked her up and we went to bed...

I let her sleep on my chest while i cuddled her. I couldn't sleep, i was thinking about what happened, what did she see? Why was she soo Scared? Is this related to the conjuring that me and Charlie?? Did we awake a certain apparition?

All this questions were running through my mind that i slept very late..

I woke up the following day, luckily i was off so i didn't take Zoe to school i wanted to spend the day with her..

She was sitting at the kitchen table while i was busy cooking soft porridge and thinking...

Zoe: Flare I'm hungry

My mind was far away.. She started hitting the table. Her: i want porridge! I want porridge! I want porridge!! I looked at her...

Me: Stop that I'm almost done.. Her: Why didn't you go to work? Me: I'm off today

Her: am i off from school too? Me: You can say that I started dishing up for her..

Me: And after breakfast we gonna go to the mall.. Her: Yeyyy!!!!!!

I put the bowl infront of her. I poured milk and sugar for her.. Me: be careful it's hot..

I dished up and sat opposite her too.. Her: Its hoooot!!!

Me: i told you be careful

I noticed some bruises on her arms.. Me: How did you get those bruises? She shrugged her shoulders..

Me: Did you fight at school?

Her: No i don't fight, you said fighting is wrong.. Me: It is.
I looked at her as she was busy blowing on the spoon before putting it in her mouth...

Me: Zoe do you remember being in the lounge last night?

Her: No..

Me: It was more as if like you were sleep walking

Her: You cannot walk when you see asleep, you will fall

I giggled.. It's interesting that she doesn't remember sleep walking..

After eating breakfast, i took my bag and went went out..

We climbed into a private taxi then went to the mall..

Our taxis are like the ones in America you know those yellow ones but ours are black...

We got to the mall and Zoe was very happy to be there.. We didn't go to the mall because we were gonna buy something, but because i just wanted to take her out for a while..

We got into this gaming place and seeing other kids playing games made her envy them she stood there looking at them..

It pained me because i didn't have money to pay for her, i crouched down in front of her she looked really sad..

Me: I'm sorry sweetheart

Her: Its okay we'll go next time when we have money

Zoe is a very understanding child, if we don't have money to afford something she won't push it..

Me: How about i go buy you ice cream?

She nodded her head.. As we were about to go i heard someone speaking behind me..

Voice: i think a princess like that deserves to go and play every game that she wants I looked back and it was Clive, he was with his bodyguards..

I stood up..

Me: Zoe let's go He held Zoe.

Him: How are you doing malady? Zoe: I'm fine

Him: Do you know who i am? Zoe shook her head no..

Him: i am the Prince that's gonna make your dreams come true, would you like to go and play games?

Zoe nodded

Him: Which one is your favourite? Her: i like riding the unicorn

Him: Do you know that the unicorn brings about luck? Zoe shook her head no.

Him: Yes it does, when you ride the unicorn i heard you turn into a real Princess I saw Zoe's eyes widening

Her: Really?

Him: Yes, wanna try? She nodded..

Him: Let's go then..

He took her by her hand and they walked in.. The bodyguards paid and he took her to the unicorn and put her ontop of it..

They pressed it and it started going up and down, Zoe was just happy and laughing.. Clive came to me..

Me: Thank you Your highness Him: Can i be Clive, just for today? Me: Fine Clive..

He smiled at Me, and i just looked at Zoe..

PART 9

When she was done with games, the Prince took us to some restaurant to eat.. It was an uncomfortable situation because everyone was looking at us, most people in town know that I'm a servant at the Royal house so they couldn't grasp the fact that i was there with the Prince of Callanine... I was mostly scared that if the news get to the Queen, there's gonna be hell to pain....

He got us some double cheese and bacon ham burgers, it was a cheese burger with fries and a soda.. I looked at the burger and it was stuffed, there was cheese, burger petty, cucumber, tomato, Bacon you name it, it was there....

Prince: You know why they call it a double cheese burger?

Zoe: Because it's big

He laughed..

Him: That's a good one.. He looked at me..

Him: You don't really like greasy food do you? Me: i do

Him: Well you haven't touched your burger Me: I'm just not that hungry, sorry..

I was hungry, i was just scared of the Queen showing up and causing a scene for me..

I waited for them to eat, when they were done we went.. I had my ham burger as a take away...

The Prince decided that we must buy Zoe toys first before going home, i didn't argue with him because he was not gonna take my word anyway..

He finally drove us home, this time around he was chauffeured with a Bentley. We were all sitting at the back Zoe was very Thrilled with the toys, it was just crazy what the Prince did especially because i saw no apparent reason for him to be buying Zoe toys.

We finally arrived at home, and he offered to even walk us

in.. I seriously don't know what Clive wants from us, why is he finding so much pleasure in a servant..

We got to the door, and i looked at him.. Me: Thank you for driving us home

I looked at Zoe..

Zoe: Thank you for the toys

I opened the door, Zoe went in first and before i could go inside he held my hand.. Him: i would like us to do this again

I looked at his hand and he let go.. Me: What do you want from me? hi Him: i just wanna get to know you

Me: I'm not an interesting person to know, I'm just a servant.. Him: What if i don't see you like that?

I looked at him and our eyes locked.. He leaned over and kissed me. Believe me when i say it was my first time kissing a guy...

I just froze, my body failed me. I didn't know how to react to him and most of all i didn't know what to do or how to kiss him back because i have never had such an experience. I've always been this introverted girl, always minding my own business and I've never opened that window in my life because I've always been committed to my work...

I started working at the Royal house when i was just 14 years old so i have never had the opportunity to experience other things like going out and having fun my life has always been revolved around cleaning and cooking and taking care of my sister.....

I pulled out.. My knees were weak, i was Shaking i mean i just had "Royalty" kissing me that just never happens for servants.. We always treated like total garbage, like we don't matter.. If fate had it, a servant would even have to sacrifice her life for the Royal family...

Him: i am so sorry did i make you uncomfortable? Me: i... I have to go

I went inside the house and closed the door at his face.. I

stood there trying to figure out what just happened..

Me: i just kissed the Prince??

I sound crazy, did i really kiss him?? Alot of things were running through my mind..... I made myself some cup of tea and sat down thinking about of all this, i actually had butterflies in my tummy i never knew that my first kiss would be Royalty.

Later that day i prepared supper, because Charlie was gonna join us i mean it's the least i can do especially after how much his helping me with Zoe.

When i was done with preparing supper, i bathe Zoe and then set the table.. Me: i think you going to like what i made for you tonight

Her: What?

Me: Macaroni and Cheese Her: Yeppppiii!

As i was about to dish up, i heard a knock at the door.. Me: That might be Charlie

I went to open, and unfortunately it wasn't Charlie it was One of the Royal house Guards.. He was holding flowers..

Him: i was sent here to deliver this flowers to you Malady I took them, it was lillies..

Me: Who are they from?

Him: i believe there's a card in there Malady

I smelled them, and they had a distinctive smell. Me: Thank you

Him: Always a pleasure malady

He started walking, but then stopped.. Him: Before i forget..

He pulled out an envelope, and gave it to me.. Me: Thank you

He then started walking away and i closed the door then i looked at Zoe. Me: Some has sent me flowers

Her: Who? Me: i am..

The door flung open, it was Charlie..

I looked at him and he looked very frightened and disturbed.. His eyes gave him away that he hasn't slept for a while..

Him: i.. I.. Hope.. Im.. Not late for dinner He was stuttering...i looked at Zoe..

Me: Sweetheart why don't you go and put the flowers in the bedroom I'll be right there to bring you your Macaroni and Cheese..

She didn't argue with me she took the flowers and went..

Charlie sat down, he was also smelling like a brewery.. Me:

Charlie what's wrong?

Him: You need to help me Flare, i can't get him off my mind...His haunting me, his in my mind, his in my house i can't function very well..

I then heard a voice

Voice: He must confess what he did with my body..

I looked over at the door and it was his friend.. He was dripping wet as always.. When i looked at him i felt the cold in his heart, like he was murdered in the most cruel way ever..

Friend: Its cold and wet were i am.. Charlie looked at me..

Charlie: His here right? I can feel his presence and the coldness his here? I nodded my head yes

Him: Tell him to leave me alone!!!!

Could it be that Charlie murdered this poor soul?

PART 10

Charlie must tell the truth, that's the only way that his gonna be rid of this...

Me: Charlie you need to tell me the truth. If you did something to him you need to tell me so that we can sort this out..

He looked down, he looked very ashamed. Him: i killed him
Flare

Me: Why Charlie?

Him: We were fighting, then i stabbed him. Believe me it was a mistake, I didn't mean to kill him..

Me: What did you do with his body?

Him: i was scared, i dumped his body in that damn that's under the bridge.. Friend: He must find my body, i need to be in a better place were it's not cold Me: You must find his body, that's the only way you gonna be rid of this

Him: i don't even know how I'm gonna find his body Me: You gonna have to try.

I know that Charlie is not a bad person, i consider what he did a terrible mistake..

..

I dished up for everyone, and we ate..the friend was no long around. After eating, Charlie went home..

I put Zoe to bed then i went to bath and went to bed too...

As i was sleeping i kept on hearing a voice busy saying "Let me in". The voice kept on getting closer, and closer until i heard the voice right in my ear..

Voice: Let me In!!!!!!!!!!

I woke up immediately.. I was shaken i looked around and there was no one. The window was wide open, i got up and went to close the window....

I looked at the bed and Zoe wasn't there..

I walked up to the lounge and she was standing there as

always, this time around she was talking.

Zoe: No (Whispering)

I have no idea who she was talking too because there was no one in the lounge just her..

Zoe: No, i won't let you in (Whispering)

I went up to her, she still had her eyes closed.. Me: Zoe?

Zoe: No (Whispering)

I shook her, and she opened her eyes.. Zoe: Why are we not sleeping?

Me: Zoe, who were you talking too? Her: i Wanna go to bed

Me: Okay

I held her hand and we went to the bed...I wasn't sleeping, i was thinking about what happened do we have a restless apparition in this house?

It's time to get the Ouija board and ask questions..

I got out of bed, took the Ouija board from my mom's box and then i went to the lounge..

I took a deep breath first..

Me: if you are here please move the planchette, to answer my questions.. Me: i hope this works.. Are you dead?

The planchette didn't move at first..

Me: i wanna help you but you need to communicate with me... I don't wanna tarnish you i just wanna help you...Are you dead?

The planchette moved, busy spelling out words using the alphabets in the board... Spirit: Y-E-S

Okay now we getting somewhere.. Me: Did you die from a sickness? Spirit: N-O

Me: Where you in an accident? Spirit: N-O

Me: Where you murdered? Spirit: Y-E-S

Me: Do you want me to help you move on? Spirit: N-O

Me: What you want? Spirit: R-E-V-E-N-G-E

Me: Who do you wanna Revenge? Spirit: S-I-R-E

Me: No, you are dead you need to move on... Spirit: L-E-T

M-E I-N

Then i heard the voice again next to my ear Voice: LET ME IN!!!!!!

I jumped in terror, that freaked Me out...

I Stood up and took the Ouja board back to the box..Then i went to bed.

In the morning i woke and prepared coffee for Charlie and his friend.. Unfortunately the dead friend was still following them...

After giving them their coffee and muffins, i went inside to prepare Zoe as Charlie was going to pick her up later..

When i was done preparing Zoe, i bathe too..

Charlie came to fetch Zoe, and then i Walked to the Royal house.. I got there and started preparing breakfast for everyone..

I prepared the table for him, and they came down to eat....

Sire: Flare

Me: Yes Sire?

Him: i want you to work extra hard in making this place spotless the king of Netherlands is coming with his daughter next week..

Me: Yes Sire

Queen: The Princess is very beautiful and well behaved Clive you gonna like her Clive was very irritated

Clive: i told you I'm not gonna marry someone i don't love

Sire: You will learn to love her, you are a Prince you have to marry someone that comes from a Royal family

He Stood up..

Sire: You will sit down and eat with us, do not disrespect me I'm still the King and my word is my law

Prince Clive sat down again.. Ya it's not easy being Royalty, especially when it comes to marriage they force you to Marry someone you don't love..

PART 11

I felt very sad for Clive, having to marry someone that you don't love must be very devastating..

He cannot refuse to marry This Princess from Netherlands, he has to agree to the marriage, although he is a prince but he must always obey his father..

He was sitting alone in the dinning area, it was just after they finished eating breakfast..When i was done washing all the dishes, i decided to make him some cup of coffee just to relax him a bit plus the king and the Queen were out running errands....

I took the tray to him, he was gonna put sugar and Milk for himself..

I put the tray in front of him, he looked at me and smiled.. I looked down. Him: Thank you Malady

I like it when he calls me that, at least it makes me feel less of a servant.. Him: Did you get the envelope and the flowers that i sent you yesterday Me: Yes i did your highness, i just didn't think they were from you..

Him: Who do you think they were from? Do you have a boyfriend?

Me: Ofcourse not Your highness. I just.. I have never had someone sending me Anything Him: Then you must change the people you have in your life..

He poured milk in his coffee.. Him: Did you open the envelope? He sipped on the coffee..

Me: No your highness i didn't get a chance to open it Him: You must open it as soon as possible

Me: I'll open it when i get home.. I started walking away..

Him: Flare

Me: Yes your highness

Him: I'm not trying to meddle in your affairs but, i heard there's a guy that always visits you at your house and you

visit him too

Me: Ohh You mean Charlie your highness, he is just a good friend of mine.. Him: Good friend?

Me: Yes, he helps me with my sister.. He takes her to school for me and then fetches her from school

Him: Don't you have parents to do that for you?

I don't like touching that subject at all, but his the Prince i have to answer to him.. Me: No your highness, my parents are no more

Him: That's sad to hear, I'm sorry.. So you left to raise your sister alone? Me: Yes your highness..

Him: Fascinating

Me: if you don't mind your highness i would like to go and get the laundry outside it looks like it's about to rain

Him: Yes you may, and thank you for the coffee

Me: Its my duty your highness to always be at your service After saying that i Walked away to the laundry room.. I got there, and got the laundry then went to get the laundry outside..

As i was busy humming a song, and taking off the clothes from the washing line there was this strong wind, it just happen in the nick of an eye the wind rocked up from nowhere..

It started blowing up the leaves, and in that instant something very weird happened.. The leaves started forming a figure as the wind was blowing them away, the same voice came out from the leaves..

"Let me in"

This is starting to become very weird now. The wind blew the leaves into my direction, before i knew it i was like in a Tornado of leaves...I was screaming i couldn't see anything they were just spinning soo fast, then after a while everything was calm, the wind was no more.. I looked around and thought to myself that what happened was very

weird..

I saw Miraldo standing at a far distance.. She then came closer to me. Her: Well, well, well.. Looks like you are being haunted

Me: i don't know what you talking about

Her: What did you do? Did you findle with the conjuring spell or the spirit board (ouija board) I took the basket and started walking..

Her: Do you know that conjuring an apparition opens the the curtain between the world of the living and the world of the dead?

I turned around and looked at her..

Her: You have torn that curtain, and you Have awakened a spirit. And by the look of things you might have awakened the most powerful spirit..

Me: Nice speech Miraldo, but i seriously don't know what you talking about I started walking again..

Him: Steady my Child, steady...

I got to the house, and went to the laundry room to steam the clothes...

Is Miraldo right? Did i bring about a powerful apparition from the world of the dead? If so, how to i reverse what i have done. After all, all i wanted to do was to help a friend.... I steamed all the clothes, then folded them and went to put them were they doing.. It was mostly the Princess'clothes..

When i was done with half of my duties in the Royal house, i went to Have my lunch outside.. I had made myself a mere sandwich and a juice..

I then spotted the Prince standing with some woman who looked a bit old, i couldn't make up what they were talking about though..

When i was done with my lunch, i went back to the house to prepare lunch.. At least it was not gonna be hard work since

the Queen and the King are not around...

Clive walked in with the woman as i was busy preparing lunch.. Him: Can i talk to you?

I stopped what i was doing and attended to him..

Him: This is Nancy, i am hiring her to help you with your sister. She's going to be Zoe's babysitter

Oookay, what did he just say? Me: Your highness..

Him: i think it's better if an experienced person looks after your sister.. Nancy will come every morning then leave at night.

This was just too much, i don't know why Clive is doing this for us Me: You shouldn't have Sire

Him: i want too

He then looked at Nancy

Him: i guess you'll start tomorrow, i have given you the address and everything.. Nancy: Yes your highness, and i will never disappoint you

Him: Thank you

Nancy: i guess I'll see you tomorrow Flare

I just nodded my head yes, and she walked away...

Me: Why are you being nice to us? Why are you doing this for me and my sister? Him: Are you that blind?

Me: I'm not following your highness

He held my hands, Ohh Lord help me not to faint..

Him: i have feelings for you flare, deep feelings ever since the day i laid my eyes on you.. What is he saying? Is it even possible for Royalty to just fall for a servant

Me: I'm just a mere servant your highness, i do not fit in your category

Him: And I'm just a prince by tittle, underneath all of that i am another man who is very much attracted to a beautiful girl..

I wanted to blush, alot was going through my mind..

He came closer then put his hands around my waist and

kissed me.. A slow smooth kiss, this time around i tried soo very hard to relax..

I felt like i was in a different world, i felt like it was just me and him like the world didn't matter..

If someone had told me that i would be kissing the Prince today, i would've told that person to go to hell..

After the kiss, he went on to kiss my nose bridge, then my forehead..

You don't know was was going though my mind at that present moment, i had butterflies in my tummy, alot was just happening...

Him: Would you be my Princess?

Lord how are we gonna work out? His Royalty and his supposed to Marry Royalty

Me: forgive me your highness if this is gonna sound disrespectful but, i don't think Sire is gonna approve of that.. You Royalty you supposed to Marry Royalty..

Me: But i don't want Royalty, i want you

God please help me now, this is not happening to me..

PART 12

It was very hard for me to continue working especially after what the Prince told me.. Why me though? Why would he go for me? I'm just a mere servant and i come from a very complicated family..

There is alot of reasons why me and Clive can never be together, I mean i have a rare Gift and if his family could find out, i am gone they going to burn me alive...

I was busy wiping the glass table while in deep thoughts until i heard someone talking.. Voice: I'm sure i can see my own reflection on the table

I turned to look who it was and it was the Queen.. I stopped wiping the table..

Me: Anything you want me to do for you your highness? She looked at her wrist watch..

Her: No.. I think you can go home

At least i don't prepare supper, other servants do that i only do breakfast, lunch, laundry, clean their rooms, and clean the other areas of the house..

She handed me the envelope which was my payment.. Her: i gave you an extra R1000 rand as a bonus

Me: Thank you your highness

I earn R5000, so extra R1000 makes it R6000..

Her: i admire you alot Flare, you have been my servant for a long time since you were 14 or 16..

You are a faithful servant, and i don't wanna lose you so please don't do anything that will force me to fire you..

My heart started jumping.. Me: Yes your highness

Her: You can go home, Ohh and take a few veges and fruits along with Bread.. Princess Sophia has alot of clothes that she doesn't wear anymore I'll sort them out and you'll get them tomorrow

Me: Thank you your highness

She started walking away.. Although they Royal but sometimes they treat me good i mean they gave me this job when i didn't know how i was gonna make ends meet..

I walked up to the kitchen got a bag and started putting in the vegetables.. I was so happy that i was gonna get Prince Sophia's clothes they expensive and very stylish..

As i was busy putting in the vegetables, i felt someone hugging me from my bag and kissing me behind my ear, then Whispered in my ear..

Him: You still didn't give me an answer

I turned around and faced him, but i couldn't look him in the eye for that long..

Me: i don't wanna Complicate things for myself here your highness.. I value my job alot Him: i will talk to my parents

Me: No please don't!!

He looked at me just couldn't believe that i just raised my voice at him.. Me: forgive me your highness, i..

Him: Its okay

He kissed me on my cheek..

Him: We'll come up with a better solution that's gonna benefit both parties

Me: And that would be if we don't date, that would benefit both parties and keep the peace Him: Then what am i

supposed to do with the feelings that i have for you?

I didn't know what to say... His phone rang, thank God because it saved the night but to my surprise he didn't answer it..

Me: Your phone is ringing your highness Him: It can wait..

We heard footsteps, he quickly separated from me and i continued with the veges and fruits.. Sophia: Flare I've been looking all over for you

The Prince was standing next to me.. Her: I'm sorry did i interrupt something? Clive: Don't be crazy..

He walked away, with his hands in his pockets.. Princess

Sophia came to me.. She just looked at me..

Me: Anything you want me to do for you your highness before i go? Her: You slick like that!

Me: i don't know what you talking about your highness

Her: You think i cannot see the spark between you and my brother I couldn't deny, and i couldn't agree either..

Her: Spot on sister!!

She seemed enthusiastic about this, i expected her to be mad but she wasn't.. Me: He.. He asked me to be his Princess

Her: Ohh wow, i can just imagine it.. "QUEEN FLARE WHITE" in a few years I chuckled..

Me: Its just a dream

Her: You don't want to be a Princess?

Me: Ofcause i do, but Sire will never approve of that I'm not from a Royal family and I'm just a mere servant..

She put her hands on my shoulder..

Her: Flare everyone deserves to be happy and be inlove

Me: So you not against me and Prince Clive pursuing a relationship?

Her: Ofcause not!! You my best friend and my Ward i trust you more than i trust any other tramp around this town I laughed..

Her: i guess I'll see you tomorrow, did Mother tell you about the clothes? Me: Yes

Her: Girrrr! I have skinny jeans for you that will hug your thin sexy body!! You have no idea what's in store for you..

I am mostly wearing my dull Brown servant dress, i don't get to wear much clothes because i work from 6am-6pm sometimes 7pm..

She hugged me and then went..

I continued getting the vegetables and fruits, i also took some of the bread and started walking to the door...

Clive: Flare

I was at the door, i turned around and looked at him.. Him:

I'm still waiting you know

He came closer to me..

Me: How we gonna make this work? Him: let me worry about that

I hope I'm not making a grave mistake.. I smiled while looking down..

Him: So is that a yes?

I just nodded my head.. He was thrilled. He kissed me instantly.. Him: i would like to walk you home...

Me: Are you gonna be able too? We walked out...

He looked at me

Him: What's that supposed to mean?

Me: Well you a prince and I've never seen you walking He squeezed my cheek..

Him: There's alot that you don't know about me

We continued walking, he was even holding the bag for me..

As we were walking i felt a bit chilly that i rubbed my arms with my hands Him: You cold?

Me: A bit

Him: Unfortunately I'm not wearing a jacket or anything Me: I'll be alright

As we were walking i saw a figure standing on the other side of the road.. Yes it was a Ghost, a female one.. Was wearing a white dress with long black silky hair..

I looked at her.. I couldn't see her face because her hair was covering her face completely.. There was even black birds flying around her...

Clive pulled Me closer to him and squeezed me tight.. Him: Are you okay?

Me: Yes

He kissed me on my forehead..

I looked back and she wasn't there anymore..

PART 13

We got to Charlie's place, and we started Knocking.. We kept on Knocking and Knocking and knocking until Zoe opened the door.

Me: Hey sweetheart where is Charlie? Zoe: He is sleeping

Clive: What do you mean he is sleeping? Zoe: He was drinking alcohol

Clive and i got in, i saw a knife and bread on the kitchen counter..

I went to the lounge i saw Bottles of beer and Charlie was sleeping on the floor half naked, he only had his boxers on..

Me: How can Charlie be so negligent? Clive picked up Zoe..

Clive: Are you okay Princess? Zoe nodded

Clive: Did he touch you?

Zoe shook her head no.. I know Charlie for a very long time now and he will never do that, he is not a child molester..

Me: Charlie is not like that..

Clive gave me a death stare.. I kept quiet he looked very angry... Clive: You know you can talk to me right?

Zoe: Yes

Clive: Did he touch you in places that made you

uncomfortable? Zoe: No he only told me to watch TV

Clive was overreacting.. I went over to Charlie and tried to wake him up but he wasn't waking up.. He wasn't unconscious, he was just dead asleep the alcohol got him bad..

I went to fetch a blanket in his bedroom and a pillow then came to put it over him, and put the pillow under his head...

I then stood up and looked at Clive, he was fuming i could see the smoke coming out from his head(figuratively)..

Him: Are you fucking kidding me? I looked at him.. He tried to calm himself down most especially because he was holding Zoe and didn't wanna Scare her.. He put her down..

Him: Princess go and get your staff so we can go Zoe: Okay, but i was making bread

Clive: You cut the bread on your own?

Her: Yes uncle Charlie didn't wanna wake up Clive: Was he drinking in front of you?

Her: Yes

Clive: Did he buy the alcohol with you? Her: Yes but i was standing at the gate Clive: Okay go get your staff

Zoe: Okay

She ran to the bedroom to get her things..

There was some awkward silence, Clive was looking at Charlie who was still sleeping on the floor..

I have never seen the Prince this angry.. Zoe came back with her things Clive looked at me.. I went to her and took her bag...

Clive: You guys can go I'll catch up with you

I didn't wanna argue with him.. I am not a person who entertains Anger, or fighting, or arguments.. I keep quiet in such situations Because i really do not like fighting.. I took Zoe and we went out.. I picked her so we can walk a bit faster..

I am not supporting what Charlie did but i know that he would never hurt Zoe, Charlie is not like that..

After a while i saw the Prince coming to us.. I stopped and waited for him... He caught up with us, and he took Zoe from me..

Clive: Do you eat Pizza? Zoe: No

Clive: Do you even know what Pizza is? Zoe: No

Clive: You have been left in the dark

It was amazing how he was ignoring me i don't even know what i did..

We got home, i unlocked the door and we went inside.. He then put Zoe down.. Clive: Let me order us some Pizza

Zoe went to put her things in the bedroom.. Clive took out his phone and started making the call.. I noticed that his knuckles on his right hand were Red and looked like he was bleeding..

Him: Good evening you speaking to Clive, I would like to order 2 large pizzas.. BBQ Chicken and Mushroom, the other one make it 4-in-1..can you please deliver it to this address.. I would also like a 2litre coca cola and Fanta Orange.. Do you have the Magnum minis?... Add that too.. Please deliver it to this following address..

He gave them the address.. Him: Thank you very much.. He then hunged up..

Me: Should i get something to clean your wounds with your highness? Him: No I'm fine

I saw today that Clive is stubborn like his father! And he gets angry the same way that Sire gets angry, he is indeed his Father's Son..

Him: I'll check on Zoe

As he went to check up on Zoe i decided to wash the dishes that i couldn't wash this morning, then tidied up a bit...

The door bell rang after a few minutes, i went to open and they was delivering our Pizza.... I let the guy in..

Me: I'll get the money..

I walked up to the bedroom and what i saw was a moment that really brought about mixed emotions.. Clive was very good and Fond of Zoe.. He had put Zoe in bed and was singing her a lullaby,and Zoe was asleep.. He was brushing her hair..

Him: "i know this girl, her name is Zoe and it's past her Bed T-I-M-E.. she goes to sleep, but she cannot just dream being stuck in.."

He stopped singing when he saw me....

He kissed her on her forehead and pulled the bed covers up..

Me: the pizza guy is here your highness

He walked out pass me to go attend to the bill....

I went over to Zoe and looked at her, i kissed her goodnight then went to the kitchen...

Clive: I'll dish up for you

I sat down, and he went to the cupboards to get the plates and glasses.. He put 2 slices of pizza for me, he poured cool drink as well..

Him: i hope you do eat Pizza

Me: There's always a first time for everything Your highness.. I have never ate pizza in my whole life..

He sat down next to me, and dished up for himself too...

I don't like the tension between us, i must apologise a servant always apologises even we not wrong..

Me: i apologise Your highness He looked at me...

Me: Whatever i did that upset you please forgive me He put the slice of pizza down..

Him: Come here

I stood up and he made me to sit ontop of him.. He held my hand..

Him: I'm the one who should be apologising Malady.. What happened Today reminded me of something i tried to Bury but thinking about it still makes me angry.. Me: What is it?

Him: When i was living in the United States, i had this neighbour Pam she was a sweet little girl almost Zoe's age.. She lived with her mother and father, the father was a drunk and Abused them...

Everytime when i came back from my basket ball practice, i would find Pam sitting by the stairs she always had a black eye.. She was very quiet would not talk.. I used to sit next to her by the stairs.. At first we would not talk because she didn't wanna talk to me, but as Time went on she ended up being comfortable with me...

I saw that this wae breaking him..

Him: I ended taking her to my basket ball practice sessions,

I'd take her out for ice creams and she started being a child again, only problem was when she had to go back home.. One day i had to go ball, we were playing against this other team.. Pam begged for me to take her with but unfortunately i couldn't because it was far and i didn't wanna land her in trouble with her father..

After 2 days when i came back i saw alot of Cops in the building... I saw tears in his eyes..

Him: I went to find out what happened His voice was breaking..

Him: He...he had killed them, he cut them into pieces and then staffed them in an old freezer.. I blamed myself ever since, had I taken her along she would still be alive.. I look at Zoe and she reminds me of Pam all i wanna do is to just protect her from this cruel world.. I just wish Pam could know how sorry i am that i was never there to protect her.. As we were having a heart to heart i saw a white light appear in the room, then a little girl appeared from that light.. She was glowing, wearing a white dress that had wings and she was carrying something like a wand.. She was surrounded by soo much calmness and peace..

Her: You need to stop blaming yourself Clive i am happy now I'm not suffering anymore

Her voice sounded like it had echoes..

She came closer and touched his cheek, he responded to that i looked at him..

Him: I'm sorry sometimes when talk about her i feel her presence as if like she's here with me

I wish i could tell him that she's here, i wish i could tell him that she's at peace, but how do i do that without him thinking that I'm practicing sorcery??

PART 14

The Prince left at around 22:00

I wish i could've told him about that little girl, but hey It's better keeping quiet than being burned while you still alive...

I was standing at the door while he was standing at doorway.. Him: guess I'll see you tomorrow

Me: i guess soo too

He got closer and kissed me.. Him: Good night

Me: Night

He then went and i closed the door.. I was soo inlove, such thing has never happened to me..

I then cleared the table, put the leftover pizza in the fridge...

I then went to take a bath, and after I got in bed and slept.

This tradition of the window opening at night happened again, as always i got out of bed and went to close it.. As always Zoe was not in bed..

I was getting tired of this seriously i need to do something about it soon..

I went to the lounge and surprisingly tonight Zoe wasn't standing in the middle of the room as always, she was sitting down on the floor and drawing something..

Me: Zoe??

I went over to her and i looked over on what she was writing, it was a language i didn't understand..

I looked at her Me: Zoe??

She raised her head and looked at me.. Her: Baba duhet të vdesin (Sire must die)

I looked at her, she didn't look like my little sister at all...she looked more like she was possessed her eyes had rolled at the back of her head..

Me: Who are you?? And what have you done with my sister?? Her: unë jam (i am Mishaka Versini)

I didn't hear a word she said other than "Mishaka Versini"..

I picked it up from there that the spirit of Mishaka Versini has passed my sister.. Me: What do you want???

Her: You have let me in!!!!

Soo all along the spirit that has been troubling us is the spirit of my ancestor the Great "Mishaka Versini"

How i was gonna drive her out of Zoe's body i didn't know..

She stood up and her eyes turned back to be normal, but they didn't look normal to me.. Her pupil and iris were pure black and her teeth were very sharp if she bites you you were gonna bleed immediately..

Her: Let me have my revenge, then after you will have your sister back Her voice was weird too..

It was a bit scratchy and sounded like her nose was blocked... Me: What did Sire do to you?

Her: Unë jam duke kërkuar hakmarrje (i am seeking revenge)

I didn't know what that meant but all i know that Whatever the king did to Mishaka she was here to settle the score..

What was more interesting was that i wasn't afraid of her, or maybe it's Because i could sense the spirit of Zoe in that body..

Me: What did you do to my sister? Her: She's alive just asleep.

Me: Leave my sister out of this! Her: She let me in!!

After that she crawled on the wall all the way up to the ceiling that was creepy i won't lie..

Her hair was floating in the air, she was crouched in the ceiling..

She didn't say anything she closed her eyes... I then walked out to my bedroom and locked the door...

I got my mom's books of spells and unfortunately I couldn't find a spell that could vanquish Mishaka Versini...

I then closed the book and put it back then i slept...

I woke up the following day and went to bath, when i was

done i went and dressed up for work..

I then walked up to the kitchen.. Before you could get to the kitchen you pass by the Lounge and i saw Zoe should i say Mishaka all sitting at the corner eating moths.. What i was more worried about was What all of this was gonna do to my sister's body..

I went to the kitchen to prepare something to eat when i heard someone Knocking at the door and went to open, it was the Nanny...

Her: Good morning miss Flare Me: Good morning

I didn't expect this, how am i gonna play this out... Her: May i please come in?

Me: uhm Ofcause I let her in

Her: i cannot wait to meet Miss Zoe I pulled a fake smile...

Me: uhm Yes Ofcause, let me check up on her. Would you mind just staying here soi could get her?

Her: i will be right here Me: She's a bit shy

She pulled out the chair and sat down.. Her: most kids are shy Miss Flare

Me: Well let me get her..

I went to the lounge, she was still eating the moths i don't even know were she got them from...

I looked at her, Lord how am i gonna pull this off?? I cleared my throat.. She looked at me..

Me: Someone is here to babysit you

She just opened up her mouth, her tongue was all black from eating all this moths.. Me: if you pull this off i will help you get your revenge

She looked at me

Me: I'm the Princess'ward and a faithful servant in the Royal house She Stood up.

I stretched out my hand to her.

After a few minutes she stretched out her hand to mine....I then walked her out to the kitchen

Me: meet my sister Zoe Zoe was looking down

Nanny: Look at how adorable she is She came closer to her and Zoe held on to my arm very tight... Her: She looks shy

Me: She's very shy

I seriously don't know how Mishaka was gonna pull of this out..

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**

PART 15

I was unsure of leaving My sister with the Nanny especially since she has Mishaka's spirit dwelling inside of her body.. I had to go to work, i had not choice i had instructed the Nanny to call me if there's anything wrong with Zoe.. It was a bit chilly as i was walking to work, had my jacket on, my maid dress and Boots..

.
.

I arrived in the Royal house when everyone was still sleeping and i prepared breakfast.. I went to set up the table for everyone...

At around 8am,they woke up and gathered around the table to eat... Sire seemed a bit off, like something was bothering him..

Sire: i still cannot believe that we were so blind!! Queen: Flare please Fill up the basket with Rolls Me: Yes your highness

Clive: Let me go with you, i need some Tomato sauce..

I walked out to the kitchen, with Clive following me at the back..

As soon as we got to the kitchen, he turned me around to face him and he just kissed me.. Him: i missed you

Me: i missed you too your highness Him: i hate it when you call me that Me: You are Royalty ain't you? Him: Well not to you

I chuckled..

Him: i can't wait to marry you I looked down..

Him: Did i say anything wrong? Me: No just that..

He lifted my chin and made me to face him.. Him: What is it?

Me: i doubt it will get that far..

Him: What's that supposed to mean?

Me: You know Sire and the Queen will never accept that

Him: Prince Charles married Kate she's not Royalty

Me: She ain't a Servant either

Him: Servants also deserved to be loved don't you think? I

shrugged my shoulders..

He leaned closer and kissed me again.. We then heard someone walking in... Voice: cut it out would you?

Thank God it was Princess Sophia!

Her: Mother is waiting for those rolls Flare Me: Ohw Ya

I went to get the rolls, Clive walked back to the dinning area.

Sophia grabbed his arm. Her: Lipstick

He wiped it off and went.. Me: Sire is not himself today

Her: Where can i start? I looked at her...

Her: We have found out that Miraldo is a sorcerer I almost dropped the Basket..

Me: You don't say! But how?

Her: We found alot of books in her bedroom that talks about spells and alot of other Things.. She confessed to making my father sick

Me: So what's her future?

Her: She's gonna be burned tonight! That sounded very terrible...

Her: Come on let's go

We walked out to the dinning area

Queen: There you are, i almost thought that we were gonna have to send a search party for you!

Me: Forgive me your.. Her: Save it!!

I put the rolls down..

Queen: Ohw and Flare you will go around Pasting this posters in Town everyone must report to the chamber tonight

I acted like i didn't know anything.. Me: if i may ask why your highness?

Sire: Because I'm putting a sorcerer to death, and everyone must be present to witness Me: Why Sire?

Him: Pardon?

Me: forgive me Sire if this will seem like I'm out of line but why must she be burned Because of the fact that she's different??

Everyone looked at me as if like I just didn't say that!!

Sire: You are out of Line Young lady. Who Gave you the Authority to question me?! Clive: I'm sure she didn't mean too father

Me: I just.

Sire: Silence!!! I will not have another sorcerer roaming in my Town! I will kill every sorcerer just like i did with the Versini Family!!

Me: And you must be Proud!

Ohh my word i just raised my voice at the King, i didn't mean too, i.. He stood up...

Him: Phia

Sophia: Yes father? Him: Go Get the Guards Sophia: Yes father

She stood up..

Clive: Father there's no need..

Him: Clive, i didn't ask your contribution in this matter..

Sophia came back with the Guards, they had a whip with them.. Sire: Take her to the Hall!!!

The Guards escorted me to the Hall.. Clive: Father there's no need to do this..

We got to the Hall, it was me the Guards, Sire, Clive, The Queen and Sophia... Sire: Strip her naked!

They stripped me naked, i was only left with My bra and my underwear..the Guards held my hands down tight and Sire started whipping me on my back.. I could feel the pain, each stroke probably tore through my Skin and into my bones...

He was merciless, i cried and screamed but he didn't stop..

I could see the Anger building slowly inside Clive, each whip made him more and more Angry..

Clive: Do you really have to do this to a woman? What kind of Animal are you?? (Shouting)

Sire stopped..

Sire: You will take back those words, i might be your Father but I'm still a King and you will respect me..

Clive: i have lost all respect for you!

Sire: i will put you in prison until you learn some respect!!

You shall not have any meal! He looked at the Guards and they let me go, they went to Clive and cuffed him.. Queen:

Sire Please don't do this!

Sire: He will respect me! Sophia: Father!

Clive: If this makes him feel like a real man then let him be..

As i was laying on the floor crying, i suddenly heard a noise i looked up and an Eagle was flying around.. I don't know how it got it or where it came from.. It flew Straight to Sire, as it was attacking him i heard a voice roaming around the hall.. I think i am the one who heard it...

Voice: Take heart Flare, his day will come.. And his day is Near..

I heard that voice very clear, it was The voice of Mishaka and I'm suspecting she's the one who sent The Eagle..

PART 16

I don't know what ended up happen, but i opened my eyes and looked around. I saw White walls, i looked at the duvet, it was Sliver and white. I know this room, I've been here before.. I looked over to my left and Saw Princess Sophia..

Me: Pri..

Her: Hey.. Don't say anything.. Me: Where am..

I was very sleepy, i was trying to stay up though.. Her: The Doctor sedated you, get some rest

As i was trying to stay up, i couldn't...i ended up passing out.

I woke up later again, this time around the sleepiness had seized.. Princess Sophia walk in with a Tray of food..

Her: You are up.. I made you some chilli soup and rolls Me:

Thank you

I tried sitting up straight but the pain in my back was very excruciating.. Her: Take it easy

Me: What time is it? Her: Just after 16:00

Me: i have to go home, my sister

Her: You are not going anywhere, i will send a word out that your sister can be brought here..

Me: No!!!

She looked at me

Me: i doubt Sire will allow

Her: Father is at the hospital, the Eagle did a number on his eyes.. Doctor says they not sure if his gonna be able to see
Wow that was shocking..

Sophia: i have spoken to Mother she allowed so I'll tell the Guards to go and get your sister.. You guys will stay here until you feel better and can go home..

The was a knock at the door.. Sophia: Come in Clive walked in, Seeing him just made me emotional..Tears burned my eyes. He came to me..

Him: Phia can you please give us some space Sophia:
Ofcourse.. Please make sure she eats Him: i will
She stood up and Walked out.. He came and sat next to me
then wiped my tears.. Him: i am soo sorry
Me: i thought he was going to kill me Him: i was never
gonna allow him! He held my hands and kissed them... Me: i
also thought that you'd be in jail Him: Mother got me out...
Me: Where is Sire?
Him: Hospital.. Apparently the Eagle really did alot of
damage to his face and eyes Me: That sounds terrible
Him: Not to me
I can sense how much Clive hates his father Me: I need to go,
Zoe must be..
Him: You not going anywhere, I'll go fetch Zoe. You guys are
gonna stay here until you well enough to go home
Me: Will Sire approve?
Him: He would be blind, how is gonna see you I laughed..
Him: i love you I looked at him..
Me: i love you too
He leaned closer and kissed me on my forehead, then ontop
of my nose.. Then after he pecked my lips.
Me: What's gonna happen to Miraldo? Him: Still gonna be
put to death tonight
Me: Who gave out the word because Sire is not here Him:
Me and Mother
I looked at him, a bit shocked.. Me: You hate Sorcery?
Him: i feel like sorcerers should be put to death.. Sorcery is
toxic and has killed alot of people
I never knew that was how Clive felt about sorcery, how are
we gonna work out?? What's gonna happen when he finds
out about my Gift?? Is he gonna put me to death??
Him: Eat your rolls and Chilli soup before Sophia kills Me.. He
started feeding me the chilli soup and rolls.

My day was spent with me eating, drinking pills, resting and what not...

As i was sitting there on the bed, i heard the door opening..

Clive walked in with Zoe..

She ran up to me, and hugged me... Me: Easy I'm not feeling well

Her: What happened?

I looked at her, she looked like my sister, she sounded like my sister, but is it my sister???

Clive: i will leave you two alone.. He walked out to the door..

Him: The house might be quite from 18:00-22:00 we are going to the chamber I didn't say anything..

Him: But I'll make sure that there's a maid to attend to you..

Me: Thank you

He smiled at Me and Walked out..

I looked at Zoe her eyes changed, her teeth changed too..

Her: All this pretending is driving me crazy

She stood up and Walked around.. Her: How are you feeling?

Me: Still in pain Her: i can heal you

Me: No sorcery please

Her: Because the whites say so? Me: No because...

She looked at me..

Me: We cannot use sorcery here

Her: Why? You are a Versini and that won't change I kept quiet..

Her: i saw how he looked at you, do i have to guess? Me: I love him Mishaka

Her: Noooooo!!!!

Her voice was deep, it filled the whole room.. I thought we were gonna have an earthquake

Her: You are a Versini, Us and the Whites we are sworn Enemies.. It will never work out!!

Me: So what am i to do?

Her: They putting one of our own to death tonight, are you

supportive of that?? Wheni Walked in i could sense the hate that he has for sorcerers!

Me: Clive is different

Her: He is his father's Son! He was raised like his father and forever he will hate Sorcery

Me: Mishaka i am not a sorcerer i just have a Gift She came to me..

Her: Child, You haven't discovered your true identity?? Me: What true Identity??

Her: I wasn't put to death because i had the gift of seeing ghosts I looked at her..

Her: i am a sorcerer, I was the first witch in the Versini family What are you trying to tell me?

Her: You have the witch blood running through your veins.. You are a witch Flare, That's your destiny

Me: No..

Her: You cannot Run away from your destiny Me: No..

Her: Flare calm down Me: i am not a witch

Her: Flare your anger is distractive

I felt the Anger creeping up from deep within..

Her: Just don't scream

Me: I AM NOT A WITCH!!!!!! (screaming)

My scream was heavy, it like it had echoes.. Everything that was glass broke, including the windows,the light bulb and everything..

My scream was soo great that Mishaka flew across the room and she fell against the wall...

I cannot be a witch!!

PART 17

Clive and Sophia walked in, I'm suspecting they heard The "Scream".. Sophia: What happened?

I didn't know what to say, or how I'm going to explain the broken glass pieces.. Clive: Its like a Tornado was all up in here

Sophia: Are you guys okay? I nodded

Clive: This must be Miraldo's doing! You can never trust witches Sophia: She's very good

Clive looked at his wrist watch.

Kevin: Good thing she's dying in 30 minutes time Sophia: I'll go get someone to clean this mess up.. Clive: Let's move you guys into the guest room..

He came and helped me up, then walked us into the guest room..

The guest room was out of this world.. There was a Tv, we had a bathroom inside the bathroom too and a mini fridge that had drinks...

He prepared the pillows for me, the bed had alot of pillows in it..

The Duvet looked expensive, everything here looked expensive and it was pure white, might mess around and get it dirty...

Clive gently helped me get in bed.. Him: Is that position good for you? Me: I'll survive

He pecked my lips...

Him: Zoe how about we go out and Give Flare some time to rest.. There's swings and games at the back yard I'm sure you'll enjoy them...

She looked at me.. I hope she doesn't blow this up Her: Okay..

Clive held her hand and they went out.. I was sitting there

and thinking of what Mishaka told me..it just was unbelievable that i am a witch.

Before i could even close my eyes, Mishaka was back.. Me: i thought you'll be in the swings

Her: I'm too old for that She sat down on the bed..

Her: I know what i told you was scary, you eventually had to find out about who you are..

Me: i cannot be a witch

Her: Why is it so hard to believe?

Me: Because witches are bad, and i have a heart of Gold She laughed..

Her: Who said Witches are all evil? Me: Miraldo tried to kill the king

Her: Miraldo is an evil witch, she practices black magic.. We are the good witches we fight evil.. Take it like Angels and demons we the Angels..

Me: You are trying to kill Sire

Her: That's not evil, that's called revenge!! She looked at me...

Her: the powers i possessed were rather deadly and i was young i didn't know how to handle them..

Me: What were your powers?

Her: I used to start fires with my Anger.. I once looked at some boy who had did me bad and he started burning..

Me: How did Sire find out that you are a witch? Her: That's not important

Me: My mother.. Was she?? She nodded..

Her: Katherine controlled was the Queen of Thunder.. She knew how to make a Thunder appear from nowhere..

Me: Didn't she have any healing powers? Because i remember when i was young and sick when i was asleep she would transfer some white light thing on me.. She used to think i was asleep but i busted her one day..

Mishaka: We all share that one, the healing power and also being able to communicate with the dead..

Me: How did you come about? Was it when i casted the conjuring spell? Her: Yes

Me: But it wasn't for you

Her: You did it wrong.. You were supposed to call out his name to Conjure him but you didn't.. Now you have set alot of spirits free.. Evil and good spirits, you tore the curtain that separates the world of the living and the work of the dead..

Me: How do we rectify that?

Her: Its a long process but we'll get there in due time..

There's alot you need to learn before I go..

As we were talking, i heard the bell ringing..

Mishaka: Its time.. I remember that bell rang for me and that was my last time on earth.. Come along dear

Me: Where are we going?

Her: To watch one of our own die Me: i thought you said she's bad

Her: But she's a sorcerer, she's our kind..

Me: Its gonna take me a while before i could get out of bed, with all my bruises.. Her: Let me help you with that

She got in bed and got behind me.. After that i felt something burning on my back, it wasn't a comfortable feeling i closed my eyes and bit my lower lip to consume all the pain i didn't wanna scream..After a few minutes she was done.

Her: There you go, how do you feel now? Me: I feel better

The pain was gone, i felt very very good.. Me: That's amazing.. I can do that too? Her: Yes.. Now let's go

I got out of bed and looked myself in the mirror first.. What was left was scars, more like scars that healed..

Her: I'll mix up something for you to get rid of those scars

Me: No..

She looked at me

Me: i need to make them believe that I'm still in pain, although the scars don't look fresh but let it be a reminder of what Sire did to me

She smiled at me..

After that we walked out to the chamber, alot of people had Gathered there.. Miraldo was tied into a pole, with alot of woods under her feet..

I looked up and there Royal chairs were already put in the balcony.. People looked a bit shocked that Sorcerers still existed....

The Queen, together with Clive and Sophia came and took their seats.. Clive stood up..

Clive: People of Callanine! This woman was Found to be practicing sorcery. He almost killed my father, Your King!!!! He looked around, and saw me standing there with Zoe (Mishaka).. I looked at him and shook my head no, i didn't want him to be like his father.. I could see that he was fighting his emotions...

Him: My father is not here to give his word, but as a prince i take that Authority... Miraldo what last words do you have?

Miraldo: i am not the last of my kind, There's many of us!!

Him: With that Being said...

He looked at me, i still shook my head no.. He looked away...

Him: With that Being said, she can be burned!!!

The Guards started the fire, as soon as the flames got to her screamed Her: You will burn in hell Sire!!

I couldn't believe this, Clive has actually ordered for another human being to be killed in such a cruel way!!!! I look at him and see Sire, so this is what's gonna happen to me when he finds out about who i am..

I couldn't stand there and watched all of that happening, i ran back to the palace.. I was very emotional, i was very scared too...

When i got to the stairs i was soo powerless, i sat there and

just cried.. Just when i thought that i found happiness and love but it might be the Death of me....Although Clive and i love each other so deeply, but we'll forever be sworn Enemies..

PART 18

I laid on that bed, thinking of what i saw.. It's just not fair for a person to be killed like that just because they different.. Mishaka was sleeping on the ceiling as always, just awkward how she sleeps.. She climbs the wall then Gets to the ceiling and sleeps there like a Bat with her hair floating around.. I made sure that i lock incase someone comes in and sees her dangling on the ceiling like that, it's gonna be a problem.

I woke up the following morning at 5:30 and made my way downstairs.. I cleaned the kitchen first, made sure it's spotless. Everything at the kitchen was pure white, from the fridge to the cupboards etc..

I used handy Andy to clean everything because it neve disappoints especially where white things are inloved... At 6:30 i prepared breakfast for everyone, and went to set up the table...

Clive was the first one to come down.. He was wearing his Guess jeans, White Tshirt, and black and white Nikey sneakers.. He was wearing a black snap back cap this time. He had turned it around and was wearing diamond stud earrings..he looked very wow i won't lie, his style was too wow for a prince..

I watched him coming down from those stairs while singing.. Him: "Yea you know I'm fly, never falling.. Well rounded so you know I'm balling.. Women love me, haters hate me.. I ain't perfect but i know I'm one of the greatest" I tried ignoring him and continued setting up the table..

Him: Morning

Me: Morning your highness

I said that without even looking at him.. Him: You supposed to be In bed recovering

Me: Is there anything you want me to do for you your

highness?? He kept quiet....

Him: Is this about your yesterday?

Me: i don't know what that statement refers too Your highness I'm just trying to do my job..

The door bell rang, before he could even say anything.. Me: I'll get it

Him: I'll get it, could be my buddy from South Africa

He walked to the kitchen while i followed him.. As he went to answer the door, i filled the mini basket with Rolls..

Clive: Kevin!!

Kevin: Wad up Dawg??

I looked at the door and this Kevin guy walked In..

He was a different character that I've seen, was sagging his jeans, had headsets hanging around his neck.. He looked like what they call a "Nigga" one that police would shoot if they saw him wondering around someone's neighbourhood at night.... Clive: I never thought you was gonna make it

Him: My flight was delayed.. He looked at me

Clive: My bad, Flare this is Kevin from South Africa but his currently residing in Atlanta, he plays Pro ball(basket ball) For the Same team that I'm playing for and that's how we met each other..

Me: pleasure meeting you sir

Him: Its cool, you know I'm always down for meeting a few good chicks His language was too difficult to understand..

Me: Can i be excused your highness so i can finish my work

Clive: Yeah Sure

I took the rolls to the table.. Was soo downgrading for the Prince to be associated with such unservoury characters.

After 2 hours, everyone was gathered around the table to eat including this Kevin guy..

Queen: Flare how are you feeling?

Me: I'm feeling better your highness thank you for asking

Her: I can see that, judging from the breakfast that you have prepared for us.. Me: Is there anyone who wants anything else?

No one said anything..

Queen: I think that would be all..

Me: I'll be in the guest room if I'm needed I walked upstairs to the guest room..

Mishaka was sitting at the corner eating moths as always..

Me: Where do you get that anyway?

She didn't say anything..

Me: i hope that's not gonna kill my sister She kept quiet again.

Me: Where is Zoe anyway? Her: She's fast asleep

Me: She has no knowledge of what's going on? Her: Not at all

I sat on the bed, while exhaling.. Her: The White's Working hard?

Me: No.. It's just hard Seeing Clive did i tell you that today he looked very gorgeous ifi can put it that way?

Her: Flare you and him cannot be Me: I know..

I looked at her...

Me: have you ever been in a relationship with anyone? I saw that question was making her uncomfortable She shook her head no

Me: Then you won't understand my situation Her: Probably

I took a nap and woke up at around 12:00..That was an indication that i should start preparing lunch..

Mishaka was sitting at the dressing table reading some book, when i got closer i could she see that she was reading the book with spells.

Me: You just had to bring that book here? She closed it..

Her: We witches, this is our daily Bible

I didn't Entertaining her so i Went downstairs to prepare

lunch..

As i was busy preparing lunch, the door bell rang.. I went to see who it as and it was two officers..

Office1: Good day Mam' Me: Yes?

Office1: We are looking for Mr Clive White the Prince? Me: in realion to what?

He had a document with him

Him: In relation to Mr Charlie osbourne Assault, we here to take him down to the station for Questioning..

Ohhh Charlie what have you done??!!

PART 19

I welcomed them inside...

Officer2: Can we please speak to your superior?

I think they saw the maid dress that i was wearing, you cannot miss a Maid that works at the Royal house because our uniform is unique..

Me: Ofcourse, I'll fetch someone for you

I walked up to the study, where the Queen was at...

Me: forgive me your highness for disturbing you.. We have important guests Her: Who?

Me: The police

Her: The Police?? Why are they here??

Me: i think it's best you come and talk to them your highness I was a bit concerned, Clive Attacked Charlie for us and if the Queen can know about that, I'll be in alot of trouble..

The Queen stood up, and we walked out to the kitchen where the two officers were waiting.. They bowed when they saw her..

Officer1: Your highness

Queen: Good morning office.. To what do we owe this visit so early in the morning? Officer2: We didn't mean to bother her majesty so early in the morning, but we are here for the Prince

Queen: What did he do?

Officer1: He attacked one of the Callanine citizens The Queen was a bit shocked by that.

Queen: my son is a prince, he wouldn't go around attacking people, especially people that don't make sense That last part was uncalled for..

Officer2: I'm afraid your highness, the victim said it's the Prince who attacked him Queen: That's Absurd!! How do we know that this person is not trying to get money from us??

What proof do you have that he attacked this person?

Officer1: her majesty is right, we don't have proof

Queen: Then officer i suggest you go and come back when your have proof
Officer2: We apologise to bother her majesty so early

They bowed and then walked out...

The Queen exhaled with her hands rubbing her eyes..

Queen: Call Clive for me, where is he?

Me: I'm not sure Your highness, but I'll look for him
Her: Tell him I'm at the study

Me: Yes your highness

I walked out to find the Prince.. If his quiet i know where he is, and that is the basket ball court..

Indeed I found him there, with his friend Kevin playing basket ball.. They were playing music that was very offensive to my ears.. All i heard were swearing words and how loud the music was..

Me: Clive!! (shouting)

He couldn't hear me, he was busy singing along to his senseless music.. I went up to him, and touched him on his shoulder..

He turned around and looked at me, he then held me and arched my back while kissing me.. After that kiss he got me back up..

I was a bit dizzy, that's what his kisses do to me.. I was mostly intoxicated by his perfect body, he was shirtless just wearing his Nikey shorts, had Jordans on his feet and a cap..

Me: uhm the Queen wants to.. She called for you

All that was sweat that was running down that 6Pack.. He was breathing a bit heavy.. Looked a bit tired

Him: What is it about?

I was concentrating on his body, it was just wow.. He squeezed my cheek..

Me: Huh?

Him: Did you hear that?

He was now holding a squeeze bottle that had water, and a towel of which i don't know when he fetched them..

He lifted up that squeeze bottle to his mouth, was drinking the water..

He then took off the cap and poured the water on his head, I saw it running down his body.. How can one become some perfect??

Him: Are you alright?

I didn't notice Kevin who was standing next to him now...

Kevin: So this is the Flare you were telling me about?

Clive looked at me with those sexy eyes, as if like he was proud of me being his gf at that moment..

Clive: The one and only

Kevin: She's a dope dark skinned girl Clive: She is ain't she??

Me: Dope?

Kevin: it means drugs Me: So im like Drugs?

Kevin: You his drug, he doesn't close his mouth always talking about you.. I looked down

Me: Ohw

I love Clive i won't lie, and this thing that we cannot be together it's just a statement i cannot understand..

He put his arm around my shoulders and we started walking to the house.. Him: were is Zoe?

Me: watching TV in the bedroom Him: She missed school?

Me: She's not feeling okay

Him: My poor kitten, i must check up on her later

My phone rang, i always have it with me.. My Apron has a pocket at the front so i always put it there..

I took it out.. Me: Its Charlie

Clive: Don't answer it

Me: could be more important He snatched it away from me...

Him: You shouldn't be answering personal calls when you at work!! Me: The Queen always allow me to answer calls at work

Him: Well I'm not the Queen!! He was acting strange..

Him: Or do you see the Queen around right now? Me: Uhm No

Him: You will get your phone at 18:00

He wasn't Clive at that moment, he was The Prince his word had Authority.. I bowed..

Me: Yes your highness

Him: You know i hate it when you call me that!

Me: You addressed me as a Prince, and not as Clive..

Remember I'm just a servant i must always abide by what you say

He bit his lower lip in frustration..

Him: Well then as a prince i forbid you from Having any communication with this Charlie person!!

Me: forgive me Sire but you can only control me at work, you don't have power to control me after hours.. Whoever i see or who i make friends with you have no control of that..

He came closer and put his hand around my tiny waist while squeezing me tight. It was painful but i made sure that i don't give him that satisfaction for him to see that his hurting me.. He was breathing heavily on my neck, i could feel his warm breath hitting my neck.. He didn't say anything he separated from Me then handed me my phone.. I could see that he was very angry..

I took it, and bowed..

Me: Thank you Sire, anything else you want me to do for you?? I'm your servant my duty is to always serve you..

He didn't say anything, he walked away while punching Air and roaring like a lion..s the Prince who attacked him

Queen: That

PART 20

I was done with my chores, it was around 17:00. I was in The guest room dressing up i was to meet up with Charlie at the bar, just have some drinks and catch up.. Princess Sophia had given me some of her old clothes that she doesn't wear anymore..

I wore a skinny Jean, pumps, and a white long sleeve t-shirt.. I had tied my hair into a small neat bun and i was ready to go.. Mishaka was sitting on the bed with the book of spells, she has been very down today..

Me: Are you alright?

She closed the book and looked at me.. Her: You look nice

Me: Thank you

I went to sit next to her.. Me: What's wrong?

Her: My time is up, i need to go.. Me: What does that mean?

Her: There's no place for me in the world of the living.. Plus your sister is slowly awakening..

Me: i understand. Life is gonna be different without you, i mean i need help with all of this..

Her: i have written an Address for a woman who will help you with everything, her name is Naomi.. The address is at the back of the book and let's hope she's still living there

Me: i have to go, i don't wanna keep Charlie waiting..

I stood up and approached the door.. I didn't take What Mishaka said seriously it was all jibarish..

I walked in on the Queen with Clive and Sophia sitting at the lounge.. Me: Evening your Highness

She looked at me

Me: I'm done with my chores, i was wondering if i can go out? Clive looked at me

Queen: Ofcause you can

Me: Thank you your highness..

Sophia: Where are you going looking all beautiful? Me: Just

meeting up with a friend for drinks

Queen: Seems like to me you meeting your boyfriend.

That statement didn't sit well with Clive, i could tell just by looking at him that he was boiling inside.. Queen: Go and Enjoy

Sophia: Where is Zoe?

Me: in the bedroom watching Tv Sophia: I'll check on her later

Clive wanted to say something, i knew he was to contribute to the situation but

unfortunately he couldn't. The Queen cannot know about my relationship with Clive.. Sophia: How are you feeling? The bruises on your back?

Me: I'm recovering very well thank you for asking

She smiled at me.. I said my goodbyes to them then went to meet up with Charlie..

I got to the bar, and he was sitting there waiting for me.. Me: Hey

He put the Glass down that had beer and looked at me.. He had scars on his face it was evident what Clive did to him He stood up and hugged me. Him: Wow you look Good I smiled.

Me: Thank you

He pulled out the chair for me and i sat down Him: Would you like something to drink? Me: a cool drink will just do He got me a cool drink, and we sat there trying to catch up

Him: i went to your house but you weren't there

Me: I'm currently living at the Palace

Her: That's interesting, how did you end up there? Me: long story

Him: Who is.. Who is taking care of Zoe?

Me: Its alot easier at the Palace because there's alot of people so she's well looked after

Her: Flare i am very sorry about what happened that night.. I was in a very bad space

I extended my hand to his..

Me: Its okay, i know that you would never hurt Zoe

He smiled at me... Our little moment was disturbed when i heard Clive's voice.. Clive: Well well isn't this Cosy?

I looked at him, he was with his friend Kevin

Charlie looked a bit irritated by Clive's presence, i was also irritated what is he doing here??

Me: Where you following me?

Him: No, Kevin and i felt like going out for drinks and here we are I knew that he was lying, he was following me..

Him: So can we join you? I looked at Charlie

Clive: Don't worry i come in peace

They got chairs from another table, and we all gathered around that small table Clive: i must say that it's not surprising seeing you here Charlie, we all know that you a drunk

Charlie looked at him..

Charlie: My life is none of your business

Clive: It is my business when you drink then put a little's girl life in danger! Charlie: Please don't provoke me your highness

Me: You being very rude Clive

Kevin: Clive why don't we just get some beers then go and shoot some hoops at home

Clive: Naa I'm having the time of my life here..

Charlie: You might be a Prince, but you not God.. You cannot just show up in here and bother us like this. We have rights and you should respect our rights..

Kevin: Ya that's my queue to leave

Clive: Same here, clearly our presence here is not appreciated They stood up and work..

Me: Sorry about that Charlie: What's going on? Me: i.. Clive

and i we dating

He gave me shocked facial expression Him: Flare...

Me: i don't need you to judge me please

Him: I'm your friend i care about you, but this you are going way too far. Me: Charlie i didn't ask to fall for him

Charlie: If he finds out who You are it's not gonna end well

Me: I'm not here for that, at least not today.. I just wanna catch up with you

I understand the concerns that Charlie has but, i love Clive and it's hard for me to let him go..

PART 21

Charlie and i had a good time at the Bar, just drinking and catching up.. He was now walking Me to the Palace.

Me: i had a great time with you Him: i missed you too

Me: i don't really like living at the Palace, i think i should move back home soon Him: Life ain't soo good at the Royal house?

Me: I'd rather not talk about it

We got to the palace, and he decided to turn back after living me at the gate.. The Guards opened the gate for me and i Walked up to the door..

When i Walked into the kitchen, Clive was there holding Zoe.. Zoe was Sleeping in his arms..

Me: Hey

He looked at me without answering me I could notice that Zoe had hiccups Me: What's wrong?

Him: She was crying Me: What happened?

Him: She was sleeping, then woke up crying and screaming.. She was calling for you but hey you were too busy having fun with your bf

I didn't have time to entertain him..

Me: Thank you your highness, I'll take it from here I tried taking Zoe from him but he didn't want

Him: I'll take it from here

He walked upstairs to our room, and i followed him.. He gently placed Zoe on the bed making sure that she doesn't wake up..

I folded my Arms and looked at him... Him: I'm tired of fighting with you Malady

Me: I'm not fighting, that's why Tomorrow Zoe and i we'll move back home. Him: I thought you were enjoying staying here

I shrugged my shoulders.. He stood up then he came to me..
He put his hands around my waist and pulled me closer to
him, i Still had mine folded

Him: Did i tell you that that you looked Today? Me: i don't
remember

He kissed me...

Him: Can't wait to make you my Queen Me: like that's gonna
happen

Him: Prince Charles married Kate, and she's not Royalty I
exhaled..

Him: We can work this out Me: I'm not ready for the war

Him: Then let's Elope

I looked at him.

Him: We'll take Zoe and Go, far away from here Me: Are you
serious?

Him: i am

Me: You telling me that you'll give up the Throne for me?

Him: That's exactly what I'm saying Malady, i love you Flare
and i wanna be with you His eyes vouched for him, he meant
every word.. He kissed me again....

As we were kissing, Zoe started screaming.

I quickly separated from Clive and went to her.. Me: Zoe
what's wrong?

Her: Flare!!!

She held me tight, i could see that my little sister was back..

Mishaka really left. Me: What's wrong pumpkin?

She was scared, she was Shaking..

I then heard loud screams coming from downstairs..

Clive quickly rushed out, i picked up Zoe and followed him..

The Queen and the Princess were crying at the kitchen..

There were 2 police officers..

Clive: What's wrong?

Some of the in-house maids were trying to calm down the
Queen and Sophia.. Officer1: We are very sorry your

highness

Clive: Sorry for what?

Officer2: We brought devastating News, the King is no more

Queen: Noooooo!!! Not my husband (Crying)

Clive: What happened? Officer1: heart attack..

Clive put his hands on his face..

That was very, very, shocking and sad to hear..

I tried putting Zoe down because i wanted to make everyone tea, but she refused.. She was holding me tight

Clive: Give her to me She agreed to go to Clive

I made everyone chamomile tea, we were sitting at the the Dinning table.. This news hit the Queen hard she wasn't taking it easy..

Queen: this whole town it's gonna rejoice when they hear the News.. I didn't say anything, i didn't know what to say..

As silence was eluding the room, i saw Mishaka standing at a far distance.. I think Zoe saw her too because she buried her face on Clive's chest and held him tight. Clive: Are you okay Princess?

He asked that referring to Zoe..

Queen: Poor thing, she's probably shaken by the news we all are Mishaka smiled at me..

Her: Good bye Flare, My work here is done..

She disappeared, but her voice went on to speak.. Her: You the last of my descendents.. You and Zoe.. Then her voice faded..

Me: Uhm can i go and put her to sleep?

I took her from Clive and went to the bedroom.. I put her on the bed Her: Please don't leave me alone I'm scared

I took her Teddy bear and gave it to her.. Me: What scared you pumpkin?

Her: The lady in white

I knew she was talking about Mishaka Me: She's not

supposed to scare you Her: Her eyes are scary

Me: Do you know who she is She shook her head no..

Me: She's our great grand grand grand Mother Her: Is she dead?

Me: Yes, but no one is supposed to know about her, only you and i.. If people find out about her we gonna be in trouble okay?

She nodded her head..

Me: Next time when you see her, ask her what she wants.. She just wanna talk to you okay?

Her: Okay

There was a knock at the door Me: Come in

Clive walked in he was holding a story book with him.. Him:

Thought maybe a bed time story would do her justice Me:

Thank you

Him: I'll read it for her

Me: I'll go and check up on the Queen and Princess

I stood up and Walked to the door.. He took off his shoes

then got in bed.. He held Zoe in his arms and started reading the story for her..

I love the bond between Clive and Zoe.

PART 22

Zoe and i decided to move back home the following day.. We needed to get back to our lives, and staying at the Royal house is just too risky and dangerous..

Clive drove us back because we wasn't gonna be able to walk with all those luggages.. We didn't go back straight home, we passed by at some Restaurant to eat something.. I don't like to be seen in public with Clive because people give us strange looks.. It's no

secret that i work at the Royal house and most people know that Because this is not a very big town everyone knows everyone's business..

I saw how the waitresses were stealing looks at us and Gossiping, Zoe and Clive were just eating as if like what was happening didn't bother them at all...

Clive: Are you enjoying your food Zoe?

She nodded.. They were having pizza and i was having a salad. Since Clive introduced us to "Pizza" Zoe has become very obsessed with it..

Clive: How are you finding your salad? I shrugged my shoulders

Him: Wanna talk about it?

I looked at the Waitresses, they were laughing and looking at us.. When Clive looked at them, they'll pretend as if like they working..

Me: i wanna go

Him: Because of them?

Me: No, because i wanna go Him: Flare

Me: i would really like to go your highness if it's okay with you..

I don't like people making fun of me, I've been a joke all my life.. I've always been insulted because of the colour of my skin, I've always been dissed because of being a maid.. Clive didn't push the Matter, we asked for takeaways and he

drove us home..

Zoe asked if she could go play with her friend next door, and i allowed her to go.. I was putting the clothes back in the wardrobe, Clive was sitting on the bed.. Him: Flare can i ask you something?

Me: Yes your highness

Him: from what happened at the restaurant i can tell that you worry alot about what people say about you..

Me: i just don't like being a laughing stock

Him: You cannot stop people from speaking ill about you Malady.. Look at it this way, if people talk about you then that means you are alive..

Me: You only saying that because you trying to make me feel better Him: I'm saying that because it's true

Me: Its no lie that I'm ugly

He laughed.. I looked at him. He raised up his hands in form of i surrender.. Him: I'm not gonna entertain petty comments from petty people..

I continued packing the clothes away, and he came then hugged me from the back while kissing me on my neck.. That sent chills down my spine. I felt things happening to me..

I have never had a guy touching me like this, wanting me like this.. I never thought I'd be attractive to someone one day, especially Royalty..

He turned me around and started kissing me, he got his hands under my tshirt.. He was running them on my body, they were a bit cold though but i let them be..

When he attempted to take off my tshirt i stopped him..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: Nothing i..

I was very scared of what was happening, i was Scared of him Seeing my naked body, i was Scared of him seeing my dark skin.. What if he doesn't find me attractive, what if it

makes him not to want me in that way..

Him: Are you feeling uncomfortable? I nodded my head yes..

Him: Okay I'll stop

At the same time i wanted us to do the deed, what if i say No and he goes and finds another girl..

Me: Its okay

Him: if you really not comfortable we don't have too Me: Its fine..

He went and locked the bedroom door, then came back and kissed me again.. He got my clothes off, until i was left with My lace bra, and my lace underwear..

He looked at my body, he was admiring it but that was making me uncomfortable.. He took off his tshirt, then his jeans and was left with his boxers..

We moved to the bed, with him ontop of me..

He was kissing my body all over, gently squeezing it...

I was feeling something different, feelings of pleasure i can't really explain how i was feeling.. He moved his hand got them inside my underwear and was rubbing me.. He whispered in my ear

Him: You like that? Me: Yesss..

The feeling of pleasure was getting stronger and stronger, i felt myself getting wet i don't what was happening that i was getting embarrassed

Him: Relax it's supposed to happen like this

He took off my bra, and was sucking on my breasts...

I seriously don't know how to explain the feeling that i was feeling.. Before i knew it, my underwear was on the floor...

He got me to open my legs a bit wider and he slowly entered...

It wasn't that pleasurable anymore, was painful almost as if like something was ripping me apart..

I closed my eyes, he kissed me on my cheek.. Him: Look at me

I opened my eyes and looked at him, the more he pushed it in, the more painful it got.. I wanted to scream stop and push him off me..

Him: Don't tense up it'll be more painful just relax.. Me: Is it supposed to be this painful?

Him: kinda, and don't hold back your scream let it out.. Let it all out

That experience was painful for a minute or so, i screamed, i attempted to cry.. Was just a mess...

After a while, i couldn't feel him inside of me i was very numb..

We went on and on, until he pulled out and splashed his white stuff on my duvet.. I was shocked to see that i bled, soo embarrassing..

He kissed me on my forehead.. Him: I'm sorry

I won't lie, it was painful..

I let him get out of bed first, he dressed up he had a very good body.. Him: I'll go and check if Zoe is not back

Me: Okay.

He walked out while smiling at me..

I quickly got out of bed, and dressed up. I was in pain, i couldn't wear my Jean anymore.. I put on a short dress didn't wear any underwear i was in serious pain especially after peeing..

I changed the duvet and sheets, Luckily the blood didn't stain the mattress and wasn't alot.. I put a clean duvet..

Clive came in with Zoe after a while, i was now at the kitchen trying to clean Clive: i have to go, I'm sure they need me at home

Me: Okay

I couldn't look him in the eye, i don't if i was being too shy, or embarrassed or what.. He came closer and kissed me..

Him: i love you

Me: i love you too

He walked out.. At least Zoe didn't see us kissing she was in the bedroom.. I peeped through the window, and watched him walking out of the gate, i was all smiling alone.

Lord have mercy!

PART 23

Sire was finally buried, he had a dignified funeral..Almost all Royalties around the world were there.. His funeral was shown on Tv, everything was just perfect...

2 days after his funeral, the Counsel called a meeting to discuss the future of Callanine..

They were against the Idea of a queen ruling, they made it clear that the white family has always had a male ruler.. Discussing that amongst themselves they came up with a conclusion that Clive must be crowned, he will be the king of Callanine.. The Queen will still be the Queen but with not much Authority..

The Counsel was back again in the palace, to discuss the matter further. I was dinning them..

Amongst them were Kings and Queens from other countries. Today was their final meeting to discuss The matter further about Clive being the king..

The Counsel was composed of +30 members..

Servants of the Royal house, we were instructed to be in the Meeting to serve only one purpose and that is to attend to the Kings and Queens incase they need something..

The elder of the Counsel stood up to speak.. Him: Greetings to the whole Counsel.

He was a King, i just didn't know which country he ruled. But he was old, very old.. Him: We were here before to discuss the future of Callanine, and we came to a conclusion that Clive must be crowned as King..

The Queen wasn't mad about Clive being crowned, she was actually happy about the idea..

King: after discussing this Matter with the council, we have came up with a conclusion that Clive White will be crowned the King of Callanine..

People applauded him.. King: But there's a condition.. We all looked at him..

Him: Callanine has always had a King as their ruler along side with a queen, before Clive can be Crowned a King he has to get married..

I didn't expect that statement at all..

King: Its tradition that he must rule with a Queen along side him.. I know where this is going..

King: We have found you a suitable Queen, Princess Maxima of the Netherlands.. I was standing there with my knees weak, my stomach was turning in..

King: in fact we have Her father with us here at this Present moment, King Alexander of the Netherlands..

The king stood up and waved at everyone, then after sat down..

Clive leaned over to his mom, i don't know what he was saying to her but i saw the Queen standing up...

Queen: with all due respect King Uther of Luxembourg. My son Would like to say something..

Clive stood up..

Clive: i respect every king and Queen that is here today....it is such an hour to have Royalties all over the world gathered here today on my behalf..

They clapped their hands..

Clive: i understand that in Callanine Kings have always ruled with Queens along side them.. I've seen my mother supporting my father in everything, I've witnessed their love for each other, where he was weak she was strong for him. I witnessed all that as a child and told myself that i want that kind of marriage one day..

The Queen smiled at him.. Clive looked at me..

Him: i want a Queen that won't be intimidated by the fact that I'm a King, a Queen that's beautiful inside and out.. A Queen that has learned to be strong through difficult

circumstances.. I want a Queen that i will love as if like tomorrow will never come..

Royalties in the room admired what he was saying..

Clive: With that Being said, i already know who i want to marry and she's not Royalty..

I saw Royalties in the room getting confused, they whispered to each other..

Clive: Prince William married Kate, and she's not Royalty...They met at School and she's a great Princess/Queen

King Uther stood up..

Him: Its tradition that you must abide by the rules, all the Kings of Callanine were married to Royalties including your Father

Clive: Tradition can be broken, If Prince William did why shouldn't i?? King Uther: Forgive me Sire, but if i may Ask who do you wish to marry? Clive: i wanna Marry a woman that i love

King Uther: Did you meet her while you were completing your studies overseas? Clive: No, actually she's.. She's a Servant

Everyone exclaimed.. The Queen stood up Queen: Clive!

King Uther: i am sorry Sire but that will never happen, you can never Marry a maid or someone that's not Royalty

Clive sat down..

King Uther: You will marry Princess Maxima of the Netherlands, then after the wedding we will Crown you King. It will be your inauguration..

After that, the Meeting was adjourned.. The Queens and the Kings gathered at the dinning Hall to eat..

I was Forbidden to set foot at the Dinning hall, those were the Queen's orders..

I was at the kitchen, thinking Deeply it was soo unfair how Clive and are forbidden to be with each other..

Princess Sophia walked in as i was standing there.. Sophia:
Are you okay?

Me: I'll survive

Her: I'm really sorry about what happened in there Me: Its
okay..

Her: Why don't you make us some Tea then we'll sit and talk

Me: i don't think i really wanna talk about it.

Her: Okay

The Queen walked in with king Alexander of the
Netherlands.. The Queen looked at me

Her: Flare? I bowed

Her: Princess Maxima of the Netherlands is on her way, i
would like you to go and clean the guest room for her

Me: Yes your highness

Queen: You know what, forget that.. I think you should clean
Sire's bedroom.. Clive was addressed as "Sire" now because
he was about to be crowned soon

Queen: i think Princess Maxima and Sire must share a bed
together so they can get used of the idea that they will be
husband and wife soon.

K. Alexander: i think that's a good idea Malady

Queen: i cannot wait to see Princess the last time i saw her
she was still a baby.. K.Alexander: She's grown up now..

I walked away to clean Clive's room.. All of this hit me hard, i
was very heartbroken.. I tried to stop the tears from falling
but they failed me..

After what seemed like forever, i was done cleaning. I had
even changed the bed linen i didn't wanna give the Queen
any reason to bite off my head..

The door opened as i was fixing the Pillows.. The Queen
walked in with some girl.. She looked beautiful, net style of
clothing was Royalty i figured that it's Princess Maxima..

Queen: What do you think?

Her: i like it Your highness.. I will settle in well here

Queen: Meet Flare she's our house servant she's been with us ever since she was 14..and Flare meet Princess Maxima the future Queen of Callanine..

I bowed...

Me: Its an honour to meet you your highness

Queen: Flare you will be Princess Maxima's ward for the meantime that she would be staying with us, you will attend to her needs and do whatever she tells you to do.. Me: Yes your highness

Queen: i think you should rest before you meet Sire P.

Maxima: Thank you your highness

The Queen walked out..

Me: Anything you want me to do for you your highness?

Her: You can get my luggage bags from the kitchen, and put my clothes in the closet Me: Yes your highness

Her: Please call me Maxima I just nodded..

Her: i really hope that you and me will have a healthy relationship Flare Me: Me too your.. I mean Maxima

She sounded and looked so sweet, us having a healthy relationship I'm not sure about that..

PART 24

I was now brushing Princess Maxima's hair, she was sitting at the dressing table looking at her own reflection in the mirror. By how she was looking at herself, i could tell that she worships her beauty. She probably thinks she's the most beautiful Princess in the world, you know that "Mirror, mirror on the wall, whose the prettiest of them all"

Her: Flare

Me: Yes your highness?

Her: i would like you to stop preparing food for Sire

Me: I'm sorry your highness but i prepare food for everyone in the palace

Her: i understand dear and i also understand that you mean well but I am a very different Princess i like preparing food for my own husband..

I felt like saying "She's not your husband as yet" Me: i understand your highness

She looked at her wrist watch..

Her: Its 18:00 i think you can go home now

Me: Thank you your highness, i will see you tomorrow.. I bowed and Walked away..

I wanted to be out of that house already, everything that's happening i feel like it's suffocating me..

I haven't spoken to Clive at all today, quite frankly i didn't wanna talk to him... As i was walking to the door, about to exit i heard someone calling my name. I looked back and it was the Queen...

Me: Your highness

Her: Can i please talk to you for a couple of minutes I really needed to go and attend to my sister...

Her: Don't worry, I'll instruct the chauffeur to drive you home I went to her, and we sat down..

She held my hand.

Her: i love you Flare, you have been a part of this family for many years now. And we do take you as a member of the family..

Me: Thank you your highness

Her: it would be a great tragedy if me and my family would lose you.. I wasn't following

Her: Do you know how many girls are lining up to have this job? Me: forgive me your highness but i don't think I'm following

Her: Flare i asked you Nicely to stay away from my son Me: i have your highness..

Her: Please don't lie to me. Flare if Clive forfeits the Throne do you know what's gonna happen?

Me: No your highness

Her: The council is gonna force me to get married Again so that the man I'm gonna marry can be the king of Callanine, is that what you want? For a total stranger to succeed my dead husband?

Me: Ofcause not Your highness

Her: Don't be the reason why my family is gonna break apart, don't be a mistress.. You really wanna make the headlines? "ROYAL HOUSE SERVANT BREAKS OF KING EDWARD CLIVE THE 6TH'S WEDDING BY BEING HIS MISTRESS" is that

the kind of girl you wanna be? Me: No your highness

Her: Ofcause not, because i respect you and you a girl with morals. Flare imagine if you lose your job how are you gonna take care of your sister?? What's gonna become of Zoe?

Me: i understand what you saying your highness

Her: You are just a servant Flare, don't fight this because the truth will still stand.. You will never become a Queen.

She was hurting me, and she was hurting me really bad...

Her: i know how men are, my husband used to have private affairs with other women too.. Flare Clive doesn't love you

don't get it twisted, it's just a fling..

I was trying to hold back my tears..

Her: Look at you then look at Princess Maxima, she's from Royalty she knows how it is to be Royalty and you on the other hand, you cannot even sit like a Princess.. Tears were falling..

Her: Flare we need to face the truth, you don't have what it takes to be a Queen.. I've heard enough, i wanna go now...

Her: You can be excused now Me: Thank you your highness I stood up and left.. I was very heartbroken i didn't even wanna be driven home.. I walked home. The pain was just too unbearable, i sat on the side walks crying.. The only words that came out from my mouth was "Why me, why me" ..

I had my knees high up on my chest and i had buried my face in my arms when i felt rain drops..

I raised my head up and the sky was very dark, it was about to rain hard.. Lighting was flashing across the sky.. I saw Crows flying around. I stood up and Walked home it has started raining...

As i was walking i saw a woman she was wearing black, she had a stick with her and crows were flying around her.

Her presence was heavy, dark, and it's like she was crowned with misery.. As i approached her she vanished.

I have seen Ghosts before, but her she didn't look like a ghost..

I finally got home i was very wet. I was surprised to see Clive at the kitchen he was helping Zoe to colour in her colouring book.. Nancy the babysitter was Finishing cooking..

Nancy: Poor thing I'll get you some towel Me: Thank you Clive looked at me

Him: Why weren't you driven?

Me: I'm not Royalty, so why would i be chauffeured

I took off the dress and my pumps, i was left with My wet bra and underwear..

At that moment i was hurt and angry over what the Queen said i didn't even realise that i was taking off my bra..

Clive: Malady you...

He was looking at me, or looking at my small breasts. My nipples were hard because of the coldness..

Nancy came back with the towel.. Clive took it from her.

Clive: Thank you Nancy I'll take it from here, you can go home..

Nancy: Thank you Sire i will see you tomorrow, I'm sure my husband is already waiting for me at the gate

Me: i did see his car She kissed Zoe.

Her: I'll see you tomorrow Miss Zoe

She then walked out..

Clive: Zoe why don't you go and See if you can colour more pictures in the bedroom Her: Okay

She took her colouring book and Walked out to the

bedroom.. I was standing there shivering, i was very cold.

He came to me with the towel and wiped my body with it...

Him: You cold?

Me: Very

He wrapped the towel around my body..

Me: i think i should go and put something on before i catch a cold He put his hand around my waist...

Me: Clive please

He leaned over and kissed me.. Him: i missed you

I couldn't push him away or stop him, he has this Authority over me, he makes my knees weak.. The towel dropped on the floor..

He picked me up and placed me on the table..

We were kissing, he was caressing my body and i was also helping him to take off his clothes..

The love that Clive and i have for each other it's just deeper

than the deepest ocean....

When we were completely naked he parted my legs and came in between them and then he slowly entered me..

It was a bit painful, I'm just wondering when will the pain go away.. My legs were now high up on the table, his hands were on my waist...

I tried not to scream, didn't want Zoe to hear then come to the kitchen.. It was pain and pleasure at the same time...

He whispered in my ear.. Him: i love you

Me: I love you too..

I do love him, and that i cannot deny..

PART 25

After our kitchen session i went to bath, just took a long warm bath.. Clive was putting Zoe to sleep, Zoe is his world.. When i was done bathing, i went to the bedroom to put on my nighties.. Zoe was fast asleep on the bed, Clive was laying next to her he was busy playing with Zoe's hair.. Clive: She's very peaceful when she's sleeping

Me: I like her better when she's sleeping..

After drying myself and putting on my nighties i joined them.. I shifted Zoe so that i could Sleep in the middle, Clive was on my right side while Zoe was on my left side.. I laid my head on Clive's chest..

Me: isn't it late Sire? Shouldn't you be going to your wife?

Him: Please don't Annoy...

I thought about what the Queen said... Me: Why don't you wanna Marry her?

Him: i don't wanna Marry someone that i don't love. Me and her don't even know each other, we have never ever said a word to each other.

Me: You know that if you don't marry her, you going to forfeit the Throne Him: So be it..

Me: Clive..

Him: Flare please i don't wanna talk about it

He wrapped his hands around me and squeezed me tight..

I don't know how to convince Clive that we cannot be together, i cannot have him sacrifice the Throne for me, i can not split the Royal family it just won't be fair.. Talking to Clive about this, would be like talking to a rock..

We talked almost the whole night about things that would probably never happen, we talked about the future and having kids you know those sort of Talks until i eventually fell asleep..

I then had the most terrify dream. I was in a very dark place, it was very very dark.. As i looked further i saw the same woman that i had seen earlier she was wearing black and holding the same stick..

I went up to her.. There was a black Curtain were she was standing, it was opened and i heard voices coming out from that open Curtain..

Me: Who are you?

My voice would create echoes as i spoke Her: i am The one they call a Black widow Me: What business do you have with me? Her: You rectify your wrongs

Me: What wrongs?

Her: You opened the curtain that separates the world of the dead from the world of the living

Me: i don't understand

Her: that night you used the Conjuring spell, you brought out many souls Me: How do I fix that?

She started talking but i couldn't hear what she was saying because the voices were becoming more and more loud, that they almost made my ears bleed..

I closed my ears and just screamed to her that she must make them stop Me: Please make them stop i cannot take this!!

Those were the only words i remember saying when i felt someone Shaking me.. I opened my eyes and it was Clive..

I was sweating, i was scared he Hugged me.. Him: You even scared Zoe

I looked at Zoe she was awake Me: What happened?

Him: You were busy screaming "Make them stop" something like that.. Me: Ohw

Him: Bad dream?

I nodded my head..

We went to sleep while i was hugging Zoe and he was hugging me..

I couldn't really go back to sleep, that dream really shook me that it took me long to sleep..

I woke up the following day, there was no sign of Zoe and Clive.. Nancy was around she was doing Zoe's laundry

Me: Nancy

Her: Good morning miss Flare Me: What time is it?

Her: 8am

Me: Oh my word I'm late for work!

I quickly ran to the Bathroom, i took the most quickest bath ever and then i was on my way to the palace.. I hope Princess Maxima won't make a big deal out of it, i hope the Queen won't fire me..

I walked into the Palace and Princess Maxima was sitting at the kitchen with The Queen..they had alot of Catalogues laid out on the table..

I was breathing fast, i had been running.. Me: Please forgive me Your highness They looked at me

Queen: Its not like you Flare to be late

Me: I know her majesty, i.. I had an emergency to attend too I'm truly sorry it won't happen again

I couldn't say that i overslept, was gonna sound weird like i don't value my job.. Queen: i hope it doesn't happen again

Me: It won't happen again i promise your highness

Queen: You can start off by doing the dishes, Princess Maxima prepared breakfast for us and it was delicious She looked at her...

Queen: i am soo blessed to have you as my daughter in law

Maxima: i am the one whose blessed

Queen: maybe you can have some of the leftovers Flare, teach Yourself some new recipes..

Me: I'll do that your highness

I went to the sink and started washing Dishes.. Maxima: What do you think about blue Malady?

Queen: Blue&Gold would be perfect, but it's your wedding so you choose I wonder if Clive has approved this wedding...

As i was washing Dishes Princess Sophia walked in

Queen: Good thing that you here Sophia we were discussing the wedding Sophia: Yes i am sorry but.. Flare

I looked at her

Her: Could you come and help me with something in my room? Me: Yes Your highness

I stopped what i was doing and we went into the bedroom

Me: What can i do for you?

Her: Nothing, i just wanted to get you out of there I sat down and exhaled

Me: Thank you, it was a difficult atmosphere to breath in..

Her: i can imagine

I adore the friendship that i have with Princess Sophia.. Her:

You know I'm in pain

Me: Are you hurt?

Her: No, just period pains

She put her hand on her abdominal area..

Me: That's weird i mean you haven't heard those for a while now Her: i know but seems like they back

Me: I'm sorry

Her: Its okay... So did you go on your periods this month?

Me: I beg your Pardon your highness?

Her: What?? I can't believe i asked that.. So inappropriate

Me: Its okay, and no i haven't had my period this month Her: That's good

I looked at her

Her: i mean that's.. Maybe they are still coming Sophia was acting very strange..

Her: When are you ovulating? I looked at her..

Me: i don't know

Her: Ofcause you don't She looked very nervous..

Me: Are you alright your highness? She looked at me

Her: Huh?

Me: Are you alright? She smiled

Her: Ofcourse I'm alright why wouldn't i be? She put her hand on her forehead..

Her: Are you fertile?

She asked that question while coughing...

Me: Your highness what is all this questions about? Her: Well i...

There was a knock at the door... Sophia: Come in!

The door opened and Clive walked in.. Clive: So what did you... Whoa! Flare He looked surprised to see me there

Clive: Phia i didn't know that you would be with Flare Sophia: I know hey, i got bored sitting all by myself

They both were Acting Strange, busy communicating with their eyes.. Clive: Uhm mom is calling for you Flare

Me: Ohh I'll attend to her

I stood up and Walked to the door..

As i exited i didn't fully close the door..i wanted to hear what they were up too Clive: So?

Sophia: i didn't get alot

Clive: What do you mean you didn't get alot Sophia: She was starting to suspect

Clive: I swear Sophia if you fuck up my plans.. Her: Shhhhh

Clive: What?

After a few seconds the door opened, and i fell in.. Sophia: Flare where you eavesdropping?

I looked at Clive he was standing there folding his arms waiting to get an answer..

PART 26

I got up and fixed my dress.. They were standing there looking at me.

Me: Well i was holding the door handle about to open when you beat me to it Your highness then opened and i fell in..

Sophia: So you didn't hear anything? Me: Hear what?

Sophia: Good..

Clive was standing there looking at me as if like he didn't believe me.. There was a knock at the door.

Sophia: Come in

Princess Maxima walked in..

Her: Ohw i was looking for you Flare

Me: Is there anything i can do for you your highness?

She was looking at Clive, i could see her heart jumping right through that tshirt. Clive was looking at at her too, but he looked irritated by her presence

After a few seconds she broke the eye contact.

Maxima: Ohw uhm i don't really like how you make my bed, so i was wondering if i can show you how it's done so that you'll do it better next time..

Me: Ohw forgive me your highness Clive: i like how Flare does my bed

Maxima: forgive me Sire but she does it like how a maid does it.. Clive: Excuse you?

Clive was getting ticked off, i was praying that he doesn't say anything that would make Maxima notice that me and him are seeing each other.

Maxima: Forgive me Sire but i addressed her on what she is, she is the house servant ain't she Sire?

Clive was looking at her, he was boiling inside.. Sophia:

Ookay this is awkward

Clive: What business do you have with my bed? Maxima: We are too share a bed Sire

Clive: What??

No one said anything.. Clive: Who approved that? Maxima:
The Queen Clive: The Quee.. She??
That's how much he was angry, he was stuttering..
He then walked out of the room, we all stood there in silence
no one dared to say anything..
I cleared my throat.
Me: We can go so that you can show me your highness Her:
No its okay, maybe some other time
She looked upset, ain't nothing painful than having your
future husband being cold towards you.
She went out of the room too, Princess Sophia and i looked
at each other then we laughed..
Me: That was not nice Her: i don't wish to be her
Me: Same here your highness
She folded her arms and looked at me Me: What?
Her: You sneaky as hell
Me: i don't understand what you talking about Her: You
were eavesdropping weren't you?
I looked away
Her: i knew that your named spelled out s.n.e.a.k.y..what did
you hear? Me: Not much
She squinted her eyes. Me: i promise you
Her: If you say so
Me: Can i get back to work now? She nodded her head..
I walked out of her bedroom and went to finish washing
Dishes at the kitchen.. I then tidied up a bit around the
house.

It was now lunchtime and i was done with some of the house
chores. I was already tired, i couldn't wait for 18:00 to hit the
clock.. I was looking out at the window, checking out those
red and white roses outside..
Until someone disturbed me by clearing their throat, i turned
around and it was Princess Maxima.. She looked down, her

eyes were a bit red and swollen looks like she has been crying....

Me: Sorry your highness i was just... Her: Its okay

Me: Is her majesty alright?

She exhaled, her eyes filled with tears Her: i need your help
Flare

Me: Ofcause your highness I'm always at your service Him:
You know Prince Clive more than i do

Me: That's true I've been working here since I was 14..

Her: This might be awkward but.. I suspect that his inlove
with someone i can see it in his eyes

My heart started beating very fast, i was getting a bit scared

Her: Do you perhaps know any female that his close with?

I wanted to speak, but my throat raised no words..so i shook
my head no instead.. She sat down

Her: i fell in love with him the moment when Father showed
me his picture and told me that this is the man I'm going to
marry..

She chuckled through those tears Her: i know it sounds crazy
but. Me: It doesn't sound crazy at all

It wasn't crazy at all, but it was too much for me..it's hard
listening to another woman telling you how much they
inlove with your man..

Her: i already pictured us having the most expensive and
beautiful wedding that's gonna be broadcasted on Tv, i see
us having kids i just see us having a perfect life. I didn't know
what to say so i kept quiet..

Her: Help me Flare I looked at her..

Her: You been a servant here ever since you were young, you
know him better you know what he likes and what he
doesn't like..

Her eyes were pleading, she was desperate

Her: Do you know how many Princesses would give anything
to marry him? I am blessed to have him and I'm not gonna

lose him.

I smiled at her.

Me: Ofcourse I'll help you your highness

It's not like i have any choice, i must help this young woman to win My man's heart.. Her: Thank you very much

I smiled at her..

Me: Well you can start by making him lunch, he likes a grilled cheese burger Her: I don't know how to do that

Me: I'll help you, Better yet I'll do it

For you then we can say you made it.. It'll be our little secret

She smiled at me.....

I made the grilled cheese burger for her, then gave it to her so he can take it to him.

I continued with my work until 15:00 then decided to eat something. I always have my lunch outside at the garden.. I am allowed to eat anything i want at the Royal so i made myself a nice sandwich with Ice tea..

While i was sitting there eating, i saw Clive coming.... He came and sat next to me...

He kissed me on my cheek.. Him: Thank you for the burger

Me: i didn't make it

Him: I know you the one who made it...

Me: How did you know I'm the one who made it?

Him: Because only you can make it the way that I like it I smiled and looked down..

Him: Are you okay? I nodded my head

Him: You not okay, what's wrong? Did she do something to you? Me: No

Him: Then what's wrong? I looked at him

Me: She loves you..

Him: Ofcourse she would love me I'm a Prince

Me: Then it must be nice being a Prince all the Princesses just wanna get married to you

He giggled.. I looked at him, how can he find such funny?

Him: Are you jealous?

Me: Jealous? Him: Its not a sin

Me: I'm not jealous Sire

Him: You shouldn't be because I only love you..

Life is cruel sometimes, keeping two hearts that love each
apart..

PART 27

My shift finally ended. I couldn't wait to get home, just make myself a cup of tea and sleep..

Winter was approaching so it was a bit dark, Clive had me Chauffeured...

I got home, Nancy had cooked dinner she even bathe Zoe. I love having Nancy around she's great help she cooks, she cleans and all of that.

Me: Thank you soo much Nancy you really shouldn't have

Her: Its okay, i like helping you.

Me: Thank you soo much Her: Don't mention it

She went to go get her bag.. Zoe was sitting at the kitchen..

Me: Hey you

Her: Hello

Me: What's wrong?

Her: Steven teases me at school Me: Who is Steven?

Her: A boy in my class I sat down..

Me: Well what does he do?

Zoe: He pulls my hair, he pushes me then I'll fall and he laughs with his friends Nancy came to the kitchen..

Nancy: I'm ready to go

Me: Bye Nancy and thank you again She walked out..

I looked at Zoe

Me: Well maybe he likes you Her: No he doesn't

Me: Did you ask him? Her: No

Me: Maybe you should ask him Her: No!!! (shouting)

When they she that the light bulb burst, that it scared me a little.. I looked at her.

Me: Zoe did you do that?

She didn't say anything she walked to the bedroom...Now I'm very worried about Zoe's powers especially because she's young and might not be able to control them..

There was a knock at the door..

I stood up and went to open. A woman stood there. She wasn't that old maybe in her late 50s..she was very beautiful..

Her: May i please come in Flare?

How does she know my name? Who is she? Me: Yes please come in

I let her in.. She stood there and looked at the light bulb or what was left of it.. Her: Did little Zoe do this?

Me: I believe so.. Uhm i don't mean to be rude but who are you? She looked at me..

Her: I've been forever waiting for you Me: Waiting for me?

Her: i am your guardian Me: My what???

Her: All good witches need Guardians too keep them safe and guide them Me: i didn't get your name

Her: Naomi

I remember her, she's the one that Mishaka sent me too

Me: i remember my Great ancestor Mishaka told me about you I extended my hand to her..

She extended hers to meet mine. Her: Nice to meet you too Something weird happened, it's like something was shocking her..she let go of my hand she looked at me with her eyes wide open

Her: What have you done child? Me: i don't understand

Her: You have started a war that won't end well Me: I'm not following

Her: You are carrying the Royal blood, you have stained yourself with the Royal blood

Me: i am sorry but i don't understand

Her: This has never happened before, not in a million years

Me: i Really don't get what you talking about

Her: i have to go, i need to get advice from those above me

Me: Naomi wait..

Before i could say anything else i saw a white light and she had disappeared.. Me: That was awkward

There was a knock again at the door

Me: You know Naomi you can't disappear then knock I went to open, it was Charlie..

Me: Hey Charlie please come in He was shivering, as if like his cold He didn't look like his Normal self

He sat down, he was busy scratching himself.. Me: Charlie what's wrong?

Him: I'm sorry to bother you Flare

Me: Don't be ridiculous this is like your second home

I went to get him a mini blanket and put it around his

shoulders.. Me: I'll make you some coffee

I boiled water

Him: Thank you flare Me: Don't mention it

I looked at him, what was happening with my Friend. Have i been too self centered that I gave him little attention??

PART 28

Charlie and i talked for a while. He told me his friend is still haunting him, he hasn't had peace from him ever since the Murder. I wish i could help, i wish i could do something.. But unfortunately there's nothing i can do until he finds the body, that's the only way that the friend is gonna have peace..

He left at around 22:00,i was very worried about him i hope this doesn't lead him to do something stupid..

I locked the door behind him, and then went to bed.

I had the same dream that i had the previous night about the black widow. I didn't know how i was gonna fix my wrongs as far as that is concerned..

I woke up the following day and prepared myself for work, while Nancy prepared Zoe for school..

I kissed her goodbye and Walked to work..

Charlie's situation was occupying my mind i really need to help him, i don't even think that he goes to work anymore because of what's happening to him. Believe me when i say, you will never find peace if you haunted by a ghost.....

I got to work and started with my chores. I tidied the kitchen and prepared breakfast for everyone, then i set the table..

I wonder if Clive has shared the same bed with Princess Maxima, i wonder if his feelings towards her have changed...

The Queen was the first one to come down, i tried ignoring her i really didn't want to talk to her she rubbs me up the wrong way..

As she took her seat at the table i Walked to the kitchen Her:
Flare

I stopped and turned around Me: Your highness

Her: Thank you for the breakfast Me: Its my pleasure Your highness

I went to the kitchen and kept myself busy..

Everyone came down and they all gathered at the table to eat breakfast.. I kept on checking up on them if they needed anything..

I was standing there, buttering the rolls for them after Princess Maxima has asked me to do so..

Queen: Sire

Clive looked at her

Her: Did you get Time to look at the wedding designs that Princess Maxima chose for the wedding

Clive: No Queen: Why?

He cleared his throat Him: I'm busy

Queen: What could be more important than your wedding?

Clive: Alot of things are important

Maxima: Princess Sophia Sophia looked at her

Maxima: i have been meaning to ask you if you could do me the honour of being my bridesmaid

Sophia choked on her fruit salad, she started coughing..

Clive passed her his glass with orange juice.

Him: Here down it with a juice

She took the glass and drank the juice Maxima: i am sorry if that was forward of me

Sophia: No you weren't being too forward, you just caught me off guard Sophia looked at me, then after looked at

Princess Maxima

Sophia: Can't you ask your close friends?

Maxima: I don't have much friends...I understand if you don't want too The Queen looked at Sophia..

Sophia: You know what i would like to be your bride's maid.

Maxima looked at her all smiling.. Maxima: Thank you very much

Me: i have just finished buttering the rolls, is there anything else that i can do? Clive: would please go and make my bed at the guest room

So Clive is sleeping in the guest room.. Me: Ofcause Sire

I made my way to the guest room..

I started fixing the bed, then picked up his clothes from the floor..

I was just humming and smiling, if they not sleeping together then he still doesn't like her..

After a while, i heard the closing i turned around and it was Clive.. Him: Shhhhh

Me: Ain't you supposed to be having breakfast? He came closer to me..

Him: i have another breakfast in mind He put his hand around my waist.. Me: Clive..

He looked at me all puzzled Me: What?

Him: You just called me Clive instead of Sire Me: Is that a bad thing?

Him: I kinda like it He kissed me..

Me: i need to get back to work... Him: just one quick round

Me: What if we get caught? Him: Then we get caught

He kissed again..... Before we could go any further the door burst open.. I didn't wanna look what if it's the Queen? Clive and i we just froze there

Sophia: Flare!

Thank God it's Sophia..

Her: Meet me at the chamber in.. She looked at Clive

Her: in 2 min

Clive: We gonna need more than that I hit him on his shoulder..

Me: I'll be right there

She went out and closed the door.. Him: i command you to stay

Me: hmmm i wish i could stay Sire but I'm the

Princess'ward Him: My word should be final woman!

I kissed him on his cheek and started walking to the door

Him: Flare!!

I went out and closed the door while giggling.....

I went straight to the chamber to meet Princess Sophia.. She was pacing up and down

Her: We need to talk Me: About what?

Her: The wedding cannot happen Me: Why your highness?

Her: Because it cannot.. I..

She couldn't finish her sentence Her: Do you hear that?

Me: Hear what?

Her: Nvm it's probably nothing.. So as i was saying.. You I heard a shallow scream

Her: Tell me you heard that? Me: i did

What happened next shocked us to death..

We saw a young woman approaching us, she had long white hair, she was wearing a white long sleeved dress.. You couldn't see her hands that's how long her sleeves were.. She flew from where she was to where we were.. As she was making her way to us she was screaming, that kind of scream that could Damage your eardrums..

I saw Princess Sophia going down with her hands covering her ears.. Me: Sophia!!!

I got to her, she was already on the ground and she was bleeding from her ears and nose

Me: Sophia!!

The Guards Made their way to the Chamber, the young lady made flew herself out of the chamber.. Who was she? I've never seen such before??

Me: Sophia wake up!!

She wasn't waking up, i was scared, i had mixed emotions..

One of the Guards picked her up and we made our way to the Royal house.. The Queen lost it immediately when she was Sophia Queen: Omg Phia, what happened? Me: She... I. How do i explain what happened??

Guard1: Its sorcerery your highness, a witch did this to her The Queen looked at me, i think she wanted Validation I just nodded my head yes, words couldn't come out..

PART 29

Princess Sophia was in her bedroom, she was being attend by the family doctor. I was there with the Queen and Princess Maxima..

I was praying that nothing happens to her, i cannot lose the only friend i have.. The doctor looked at us..

Him: She has to be transferred to the hospital immediately, she has slipped into a coma

The Queen was devastated, she looked concerned. I mean they're just lost the Queen, losing Sophia would be tragic too..

Queen: Flare

Me: Yes your highness?

Her: Please find Sire and inform her about this Me: Yes your highness

I walked out to find the Prince..

I found him at the hall he was with a few Guards.. Him: How many Guards did she kill?

Guard1: about 3 your highness. She has the loudest scream especially when she's close to you. You feel like your eardrums are going to explode..

Clive: I want this witch to be found, and brought to me! Search the whole town find anyone that practises sorcery and bring them Forth! Don't leave any bed unturned. I want everyone to know that Sorcery will never be tolerated in the town of Callanine,not now not never!!!

The Guards obeyed and left. I didn't like this invasion of privacy. What if they go into my house and find the book of spells, what am i gonna do?

I went up to Clive, he looked very upset. Me: Sire the Queen is calling for you Him: How is she?

Me: She has slipped into a coma,and she has to be taken to the hospital

He was drained, he felt helpless and powerless.. He sat down on his chair with his face buried in his hands..

Him: How did this happen Flare?

I walked up to him. He pulled Me closer with his hands around my waist and his face buried on my tummy..

Me: Sophia is strong, I'm sure she's gonna beat this Him: i can't lose my sister

I didn't have the right words to comfort him, i was more scared of the Guards going into my house and finding things that they not supposed to find..

Clive stood up and kissed me, then he went out to attend the family matter..

As i was about to walk out too i heard a voice calling out for me, i looked back and it was Naomi..

Me: Naomi what are you doing here?

I went to close the door so no one can see us

Her: i always have to show up when you need help

Me: Well i.. The book of spells in the house and everything has to be removed because Sire has alerted the Guards to go and search each and every house for sorcery..

Her: i will get to that, but we have to talk it's important Me: i can't talk now Naomi can we talk later?

Him: Alright

After that she vanished..

I went back to to see what was going on...

Sophia was taken to the hospital, the dark cloud has yet again filled the Royal house..

Everyone was saddened but Clive was taking this too hard....

They were all sitting at the lounge, i had made them tea to calm them down.. The house phone rang, Maxima answered it because she was sitting next to it.. Maxima: White

Residence Good afternoon.. Ohw she is here..

She looked at me Her: Its for you

I went to answer it.. Me: Hello

Voice: Is this Flare? Me: This is she

Voice: This is Mrs Kingsley i am Zoe's teacher Me: Did something happen?

Her: would you be able to come today it's a very urgent matter

Me: does it involve my sister? Her: Yes

Me: Is she okay? What happened? Her: Please come

Me: I'll be right there

I put the phone down..

Me: Sire can i please be excused? I need to go to Zoe's school something has happened

Him: Is everything okay?

Me: I'm not sure, they just said it's an emergency

Him: Ofcourse you can go, you can get one of the drivers to drive you I was scared what of something bad happened to My sister.

I was chauffeured to Zoe's school by one of the Royal house drivers. When i got there, i quickly ran in..

Zoe was sitting in class with her teacher, and the other kids were outside playing.. Mrs K: Thank you very much for coming at such notice

Me: Its alright, what happened?

Mrs K: i don't even know where to start

Zoe was looking down and playing with her fingers.. Me: What happened

Mrs K: Zoe she.. She set one of her classmates on fire Me: She what??

Mrs K: alot of kids saw it, it's some boy Steven Me: Ohh my God, how is he?

Mrs K: He endured severe burns, and his parents are not happy about this they wanna take legal action

I have alot on my plate right now, I don't need to be dealing with this... Mrs K handed me a piece of paper..

Her: This are the contacts of Steven's parents please contact

them and set up a meeting.

Me: Thank you I'll do that..

I stood up and took Zoe with me.

We got to the passage and kneeled infront of her Me: You are in alot of trouble young lady

She looked down and didn't say anything Me: What happened Zoe?

She shrugged her shoulders.. Me: How did you set him on fire?

She wasn't talking, i didn't know what to say or do to her...

PART 30

I was now home with Zoe. I didn't know how to approach this situation of wear she did. I had let Nancy leave early. Zoe was sitting there playing with her fingers looking down i could tell that she felt bad about what she did..

Me: So you wanna talk about it? She shook her head no

Me: So you don't wanna talk about it.. Okay

There was a knock at the door and i went to open. I was thankful to see Naomi standing there, i let her in..

Me: I'm thankful that you here Her: Can we talk now?

I looked at Zoe Me: Yes we can

She looked at Zoe too..

Me: i can't take my eyes of her because i fear she might burn the place down Her: Its okay we'll talk in her presence

Me: Let me make us some Tea

I boiled the water and made us tea Her: You have to fix what you did Me: What do you mean?

Her: When you casted the Enduring spell, you brought about alot of Ancient souls from the world of the dead hence what happened to Sophia..

Me: I'm not following

Her: There's alot of sorcerers that The Royal family has put to death. What happened to Sophia was revenge. She was hurt by the Screaming witch who was put to death by Many years ago By Sophia's Great great Grandfather King Edward white the 4th..

Me: Wow!

Her: This is not the end, there's still a lot of witches that are gonna seek revenge from the Royal family to revenge their cruel deaths

Me: So my friend Sophia is hurt because of me Her: Sophia can be saved

Me: How?

Her: By magic, she was hurt by magic and by magic she can be saved

Me: Sire will never allow Magic to be performed on Sophia, he will put me to death Naomi: Then you need to fix what you have started, That Curtain has to be closed Me: How?

Her: We need to find a spell to help us figure that out

Me: The Guards are going all around This town trying to catch people who are practicing Sorcery and you wanna put us in danger like that?

As i was saying that the door burst open, the Guards came in. It was 3 of them.. Guard1: Start Searching, turn everything upside down!!

They started breaking things, and turning things upside down. Zoe was even getting scares i picked her up.. I felt disrespected and Violated in my own house. How they got in and what they were doing was very disrespectful.. But most of all i was praying that Naomi has hid anything that could spell out "Sorcery"

After they had searched and couldn't find anything they left, leaving us to fix all the mess that they created.. We started tidying up, Zoe and Naomi helped in tidying up the place..

Naomi: I think it's safe now to cast the spell, because they have already searched this place..

Me: Where did you put everything? Her: Right in front of their eyes

She went and got the box ontop of the the wardrobe.. Me: How did they miss that?

Her: It's a secret

We went to sit at the lounge searching through the book for that specific spell. We were disturbed by a knock at the door again.. We looked at each other. Voice: Flare it's Charlie are you there?

Zoe: Its Charlie!! Me: I'm coming

I went to open for him, he was alone.. Zoe ran to her..

Zoe: Charlie!!!

Charlie picked her up..

Charlie: Hey beautiful how are you? Zoe: I'm good

He joined us in the lounge..

Me: Charlie this is Naomi, and Naomi this is my friend Charlie

They greeted each other..

Charlie: i heard the Guards are searching through the houses for anything that spells out sorcery and i was worried about you and Zoe

Me: We are fine.

Naomi and i continued looking for the spell until we found one.. "The spell of the Black widow"

I never finished school so reading is not my strong skill. I can read a few words but not too many..

Naomi read the spell out..

Naomi: "The black widow is a keeper of curtain that separates the world of the dead from the world of the living. The black widow never shows up unless the world of the dead has been interrupted. The black widow cannot be found in the world of the living, those who seek her must result in deep sleep"

Me: So you have to be asleep to meet her?

Naomi: I reckon so, and at the bottom there's a spell that puts out one to sleep.. Me: Well read it

I stood up

Her: "space in time and below the world of the dead, hear me now as i wish to meet the black widow"

We all kept quiet, but nothing happened. Me: Did you read it right?

Her: I did

Me: Well if.. If..

I started yawning, i was just overwhelmed by some heavy sleep all of a sudden.. Charlie: Flare?

Everything became blurry... Me: Char... Charl..
Those were the only words i remember saying, what happened next i have no knowledge of it..

I slowly opened my eyes, i saw darkness. I heard screams and cries this place was heavy for me, there was too much sadness and Misery roaming around.. I heard a voice saying "Flare" i looked up and saw the Black widow..

Her: i have been waiting for you

She wasn't Looking at me, she was looking up at the sky..

The sky had black clouds and what looked like flames.

I stood up and went to her

Her: Don't come closer unless you wanna die. That red line separates the world of the dead from the world of the living..

I didn't cross the line..

Me: if i amend my wrongs would that save my friend? Her: Yes

Me: Then tell me what i should do Her: a life has to be sacrificed

Me: Asnt line someone has to die?

Her: Yes, a life has to cross that red line and come to the world of the dead, then Everything can go back to normal.

Me: Isn't there any other way?

Her: No, the Conjuring spell when done wrong it has deadly consequences. Me: I don't know how I'm gonna get a life

Her: There's a life in you sacrifice it Me: A life In me?? I don't understand Her: Sacrifice the life in you

Me: Which life??

I saw a Tornado making its way to me Me: I don't understand!!.

Because i knew it the Tornado swallowed me....

I woke up at my house on the couch, Naomi, Zoe, and Charlie were there.. Zoe hugged me.

Her: Flare!!

Me: I'm alright baby

Charlie: What happened? What did you see? Me: i saw her..

Naomi: and?

Me: a life has to be sacrificed to amend my wrongs and save Sophia Naomi: a life for a life

Me: But weird enough she kept on Saying I must sacrifice a life in me, i think she wants me to sacrifice myself.

Charlie: That's crazy!!

Naomi: No, it's not you she wants Me: Who?

She looked at my tummy.. I looked at my tummy too Me: Are you saying that i??

Her: Yes you pregnant by the Prince Me: No.. It can't be. I can't be pregnant!!

PART 31

I couldn't sleep at all that night, i was thinking about what Naomi said. I am carrying a life inside of me, i never knew I'd be pregnant at the age of 21 and be pregnant by the Prince for that matter..

I never thought about babies, i never thought of having one well not at this Present moment.

The following day i woke up and prepared for work as always. Zoe wasn't going to preschool she was suspended because of what had happened. I am still yet to meet up with the parents of that boy, i don't know what I'm gonna say to them..

After preparing myself i started walking to the Royal house. I wasn't feeling very well, i was a bit dizzy and i felt light headed. I contributed that to not eating breakfast maybe.... I got to the Royal house and started with my daily routine. I prepared breakfast which was a bit hard because of how i was feeling but i pushed through....

I decided to eat an Apple and a Banana then drank a Cranberry juice maybe that will make me feel a bit better.. I don't know how i was gonna tell Clive about the pregnancy, i haven't even decided if I'm gonna Sacrifice the baby or not, this is just as mess..

As i was leaning on the kitchen counter i heard screams, Terrible screams and cries those ones that you cannot ignore...

I decided to go and check what was happening, i followed the sounds and they came from the hall.. I opened the door and went inside.

I saw something that really shook me. 5 young girls were on the floor crying and begging for their lives, Guards had Whips and they were whipping them.. Before them stood Clive, The Queen and Princess Maxima..

Clive: I will not repeat myself again

Girl 1: Sire Please spare my life, i don't have anything to do with Sorcerery..

Clive picked up a small bag from the floor and threw it on her face, a white powder poured out.

Clive: Then how do you explain this?? (Shouting)

I saw a side of Clive that i have never seen before. He has this anger and hate flashing through his eyes..

It was more as if like The King himself was standing there..

Clive looked at the Guards and they started whipping the girls.. Their night gowns were torn now, could clearly see that they captured them either last night or the early hours of the morning..

That could be me some day, as i watched those poor girls crying and begging for their lives just tore deep inside. I felt a piece of me dying, it was just an unpleasant sight to see..

The Queen stood there looking at them with her arms folded, Maxima looked like she couldn't take in what was happening she looked shaken up...

As the Guards continued, i saw the whip tearing through their light skins, the picture of Sire having that done to me slowly crept in.. I started feeling sick to my stomach, i got more dizzy, everything was blurry, everything appeared white..

Me: Cllivvee..

Those were the only words i remember saying as i collapsed on the floor..

I woke up at the guest room, Maxima was next to me. I really didn't know what happened or how i ended up here..

Maxima: Take it easy..

I was still feeling a bit Dizzy Her: Did you eat something? Me: i ate fruits and juice

She put her hand on my forehead..

Her: That's why you are soo weak.. I'll go get something for you to eat so that you can drink some vitamin pills

Maxima has never mistreated me, so the act of kindness didn't even scare me.. She stood up and Walked out.. As i was sitting there i felt the Urge to vomit. I made my way to the bathroom but unfortunately nothing came out..

I walked back to the room again. I heard the door opening and then closing, it was Clive..

His presence didn't excite me at all anymore, i was scared of him especially after what i saw earlier it dawned on me that the man i love has an Evil side to him.. Clive: How are you feeling?

I stood there frozen, do i know this man? Is he a stranger to Me? Me: i feeling fine Sire

I bowed.. I saw that he didn't like what i just said Him: Why are we being formal?

I kept quiet, he came closer.. Him: You scared me back there..

As he was coming closer, i stepped back. He stopped and looked at me..

Him: What's wrong? I kept quiet..

Him: Did i do something? Me: No Sire

Him: Then why are you acting so cold towards me? I decided to voice out my concerns..

Me: What are you gonna do to those girls? He looked down.

Him: They shalt be dealt with the same way we've dealt with previous witches Me: So you gonna burn them?

He didn't say anything

Me: That's how you gonna be when you a King? Killing innocent people? Him: certain things were found at their houses

Me: So that makes them Sorcerers? Him: Flare..

Me: So you concluded that they sorcerers? Him: Malady..

Me: Is this the kind of man you wanna be? You wanna follow

in your father's footsteps, then i guess you are your Father's son!!

He looked at me, i saw the Anger coming back..

Him: Watch how you address me Flare, i am the Prince and you will respect me! I giggled..

Me: Respect is earned!! You think acting like this makes you a mighty Prince?? You are ruthless Clive just like your Father!!!!

He raised his hand up, but stopped himself from letting it land on my face.. His face was pink, he was boiling with anger.. He was like a lion waiting to devour me..

Him: Never ever talk to me like that, ever again!!!!

After saying that he walked out banging the door behind him..

I sat down on the bed, what just happened? Did i really talk to the future king like that??

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**

PART 32

All i wanted was to just go home, especially considering what has happened between me and Clive. Did i push to that point where he actually felt like Raising his hand on me? Was it my fault? I had alot of questions in my mind.....

At 18:00 the alleged witches have to be put to death. You don't know how hard that hits me especially when i know that I might experience that one day...

The remaining hours of my shit were horrible, i had to avoid Clive. It was very easy to avoid him because he wasn't at home for the rest of that afternoon until 18:00..

When 18:00 Struck the clock, the bell Rang alerting us to go to the chamber. Every citizen of Callanine has to gather at the Chamber to witness that Sorcery cannot be tolerated.. Not everyone comes though, some people find the whole thing Evil and Gruesome while others are for it, they think it's a good way to do away with evil..

I was standing there, looking at all those girls being tied to the poles. The Queen and Princess Maxima were sitting at the balcony, about to witness what was going to happen.

The only person missing was Clive..

I was feeling sick to my stomach by all of this, thinking about this matter had made me vomit earlier on..

It's not easy watching someone burning to death. It's a traumatic experience that hits you hard....

This could be my future, this could be Zoe's future too. I don't understand why you have to be put to death just because you different. What the Royal family was doing to them it seemed right, to them it seemed as if like they putting an End to evil. But in actual fact they were killing innocent souls..

Clived showed up after 30 minutes, he stood at the balcony looking at us and also looking at the alleged witches. He

didn't seem like himself, he looked distracted, he looked like he was drained of his power.

I was standing there thinking to myself that Clive and I will never work, he hates my kind...

Clive: not so long ago we burned a witch by the Name of Miraldo. Miraldo came into our house as a healer but the honest truth was that he was seeking revenge. She wanted to kill my father. The whole of Callanine doesn't understand how The Royal family is in danger. Witches are always targeting us, for what reasons? I'll never know. My sister, Princess Sophia was attacked by a witch and she's in hospital as

I'm standing here. Her health is getting poor and poor everyday. Doctors cannot diagnose her, they cannot even heal her or come up with a prognosis.. No matter how much you think about how evil my family is by Killing what you say is "innocent souls" you need to do a rain check and come to realise how much damage this witches are doing here.

Other people were agreeing with him, other people weren't agreeing with him. Him: I sent out Guards to go and search every house in this town, and bring forth anyone that might be practicing sorcery. These women were brought forth, certain

things were found at their houses that makes us believe that they sorcerers.. But are they really sorcerers?

That statement was confusing..

Him: Some other people believe that If you pour salt under your bed it will protect you from ghosts and evil, does that spell out sorcery?

The Queen wasn't busy turning on her seat, she couldn't sit still anymore..

Clive: We all believe in different things, but my beliefs shouldn't affect yours and vice versa.

He exhaled..

Him: i am not gonna be my father and stand here then send out a word that this women should be killed.

I wasn't following, and so was the rest of the people there..

Clive: Where this women found practicing sorcery? No they weren't. Until sufficient proof is brought forward that they sorcerers i believe they free to go..

The Queen Stood up..

Clive: Until they are found right handed Practicing sorcery then I will put them to death, but for now They are free to go..

That took us by surprise, other people were applauding him and others weren't soo supportive of his decision. And on my side i was astonished, i didn't expect this at all. The Clive i saw a few hours ago, wasn't the same Clive who was standing before us...

After saying that, he left with the Queen following him. The girls were untied, you know it was heart warming seeing them crying like that and Thankful to Clive for sparring them their lives...

They ran to Unite with their families, it was just a beautiful moment to witness... I was truly proud of Clive.....

Everyone went about their own way, before i could go home i went back to the house to inform the Queen that i am leaving, and if there's something she wants me to do before i could go.....

As i passed the lounge, i saw Clive standing at the balcony he looked like he was drinking whiskey..

I wanted to go to him, i wanted to hug him and tell him how proud i am of him but my pride was pulling me back..

As i was standing there busy debating with myself if i should go to him or not, unfortunately he turned around and saw me.. I didn't know what my next move was gonna be, my knees were starting to get weak i was just standing there like a complete historical statue.....

I then saw him making his way to me with his one hand in his pocket, and the other hand he was holding the glass..

My mouth felt dry as if like i have Xerostomia, my throat suddenly had a lump my knees were very weak. It was almost as if like i was gonna collapse....

Now he was standing in front of me, my heart was beating so fast that you could probably see it as through my dress...

Him: Flare..Me: Sire...

I was looking down, i couldn't face him, but how was i to look at him in the eye especially after how i had addressed him earlier..

Him: Flare i..Me: Sire i..

We both spoke at the same time. Him: You first..

Me: i would like to apologise about what happened earlier, I shouldn't have addressed you in that manner please forgive me..

I bowed after saying that..

Him: Don't be, you had every right to speak your mind. On my side i wanna apologise for.. I.. Im sorry If I scared you by raising my hand on you..

That's a first, having Royalty admitting to their mistakes..

Me: i admire what you did at the chamber

He put his glass down then held my hand. I could smell the whiskey from his breath as he was sighing and exhaling...

Him: i don't want you to see me as a killer or inhuman. What you think about me matters the most to me..

Having him hold my hand like that reminded me of how deep our love is.. Him: i love you, and the last thing i want is for you to be scared of me.. He got closer and put his hand around my waist..

Him: i love you, and i hate it when we fight. You supposed to be for me and not against me..

Me: i don't like it when we fight too Him: So does that mean I am forgiven? Me: Maybe

He leaned over and kissed me.. That is how i like things between me and him, i always want things this peaceful between us..

Him: Should i take you home? Plus i miss Zoe.. Me: I'd like that

He smiled at Me..

Him: i know you would..

He gulped down what was left of that whiskey in the glass and then he walked me home..

We were walking down the street while holding hands, it was just an amazing moment..

We got home and Zoe ran up to me, he picked her up.. Me: Thank you Nancy

Her: Its a pleasure Miss Flare. I have cooked Macaroni and Cheese Me: Thank you very much

Clive: Wow i haven't had Macaroni and Cheese in a long time

Me: Then i hope you have brought your appetite along...

Nancy went to take his bag then said her goodbyes and left..

Clive: Remind me to pay her tomorrow

Me: i will.. You guys can sit down I'll dish up

Clive: Rather let me do it, you have been up on your feet the whole day Me: Its fine i can do it

Him: Flare i insist Me: Okay

Zoe and i went to sit at the lounge

I didn't know what to say to her, Me and her haven't spoken much ever since that incident of her burning that boy Steven..

There was a knock at the door.. Clive: I'll get it!

I took off my shoes..

Me: Zoe go put my shoes in the bedroom Her: Okay

She took them and went.. Clive walked into the lounge after a few minutes, he was reading some paper..

Him: Flare

He didn't look happy Him: You are being sued

Me: Sued for what? And by who?

Him: Did Zoe burn someone at school?

Me: uhm Yes

Him: Why you never told me? You are being sued alot of money! That's the last thing i wanted right now..

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**

PART 33

I didn't know how i was going to explain this situation to Clive without exposing me and Zoe. He sat down next to me, still reading the document i need to come up with a damn Good explanation as far as this issue is concerned..

Him: What happened Flare?

I didn't know what i was going to say.

Me: Well i.. I am not sure about how it happened. Zoe walked in the room..

Clive: Zoe come here

Zoe went to him and he put her on his lap

Him: i just heard that you hurt someone at school

She looked down, what she did was really getting to her.

Him: Did you hurt that little boy?

She kept quiet and played with her fingers, i was sitting there with my heart on my knees. She raised her head and looked at me, i put my finger on my lips indicating that she should keep quiet..

Clive: I am trying to help you, but i cannot help you if you don't tell me the truth She still kept quiet..

Me: She has been like this ever since the accident happened, i think she's taking it very hard..

Clive: i can see that He put her down.

Him: You can go take your food at the kitchen

Clive rubbed his eyes with his right hand, while the other Hand was still holding the document..

Me: They suing us for how much He handed me the paper..

Him: You can read it, everything is there

I took the paper. All i saw was just big words that didn't make sense to me. Reading is not my skill, you can call me illiterate because i dropped out of school when i was 14 to work at the Royal house. I am not totally clueless when it comes to reading, just certain words kill me..

There was a knock at the door.. Clive: Expecting someone?

Me: No.. I'll go and check

I stood up and went to open the door, it was Charlie.. Me:

Hey

Him: Hi Flare

He looked like he hasn't slept for days.. I opened the door for him and he came in. Charlie: Hey Zoe

Zoe went to him and he picked her up.. Charlie: How are you?

Zoe: I'm sad

Charlie: What's wrong? Her: I'm in trouble at school Charlie:

What did you do Zoe: i hurt someone

Charlie: I'm sure you didn't mean too

Zoe: He was mean to me..

Clive: So she can talk to him but she can't talk to me about it?

I didn't realise that Clive was standing at the doorway that separated the kitchen and living room..

Charlie: Did you draw some pictures? She nodded

Charlie: Go get them for Uncle Charlie

He put her down, she ran to the bedroom..

I could feel the testosterone was very high, Clive and Charlie they don't like each other and probably we'll never like each other..

No one said a word, we all kept quiet. Awkwardness consumed the atmosphere.. Zoe came back with the drawings..

Charlie: Let's go and look at them in the living room.. They went..

Him: i don't like that guy, and i don't like him being around you and Zoe Me: Don't be like that.. Charlie is a good friend of mine

Him: His a drunk Flare

Me: He is not, his just going through problems

He put his hands around my waist, his forehead came closer to mine.. Him: i have to go

Me: guess I'll see you tomorrow

He kissed me.. The kisses we share still give me Butterflies in my tummy.. Him: i love you

Me: i love you too

He separated from Me then went to the lounge.. Him: Zoe
Zoe looked at him

Him: Come say goodbye

She went to him, and he knelt down then they shared a hug..

Clive: be a good girl for me okay?

Zoe: Okay

He kissed her on her cheek.. Him: i love you

Zoe: i love you too

He got up then came to me.

Him: For how long is he planing on being here? Me: Clive..

Him: Fine.. I'll sort that situation with Zoe out Me: Okay

He kissed me again and left.. Charlie looked at me

Me: Don't start

Him: Anyway I'm here because i wanna tell you something

Me: Okay

I sat down..

Him: i wanna be the life that's gonna be sacrificed to the black widow Me: Charlie don't be crazy!

Him: Flare I'm the one who created this mess.. I.. He looked at Zoe..

Me: Zoe go to the bedroom

She took her things and ran to the bedroom..

Me: Charlie i am going to sacrifice my baby, Clive doesn't know about this baby as yet I saw Charlie looking at the doorway..

Me: What?

I turned around and Clive was standing there.. My heart skipped a beat

I stood up... Me: Cl.. Cliii..

My throat raised no words

Him: Sacrifice my baby for what? This is it..

PART 34

I looked at Clive, this cannot be happening.. Me: How.. Did.. How much did you hear?

Him: ive heard enough to know that you wanna kill my baby!

Me: i thought you were gone

Him: i came back to fetch the Document since I'll be dealing with Zoe's situation Me: Ohw

Him: Do i have to repeat myself again? Charlie stood up

Charlie: Don't talk to her like that! Clive: Yeah? What you gonna do?

Clive wanted to get close to Charlie but i stopped him.. Clive: Don't touch me Flare,i don't wanna hurt you... He was angry, i could see it in his eyes.

Charlie: She should kill the baby! Your Ass is marrying another woman! How did Charlie know about that?

Clive tried to walk up to Charlie, but i stopped him.. He yanked my hand off Him: i said don't touch me!! (shouting) Sometimes i wish that Clive can control his Anger Charlie: Let him go Flare, let's see what his gonna do Me: Can you guys just stop it!! (shouting)

I heard Zoe crying, she was standing at the doorway of the bedroom she looked scared.. Clive: Nice going!

He knelt down and looked at Zoe.. Him: Come Zoe it's alright..

Zoe hesitated at first.

Clive: Come to Uncle baby..

She went to him and he picked her up... He then looked at me and Charlie. Him: He better be gone when i come back He walked out..

Charlie: I'm sorry Flare but he was pushing it Me: Its alright

Him: Why are you with him? I looked at him

Me: What do you mean?

Him: His family will never accept you, and i don't like how he

treats you.. I sat down.

Me: His not that bad Charlie

Him: You sound like an abused woman busy protecting him I looked at him as if like he didn't say that..

He raised his hands as a form of surrendering.... Me: How did you know that his getting married? Charlie: You haven't read the papers lately?

Me: Ohw it's in the papers

Him: Its everywhere. Flare you not one of those girls Me: i love him Charlie

Him: Does he even know that you...

I shook my head no

Him: You are playing with fire and how do you love a guy whose gonna be married to another woman in a month's time?

I didn't know what to say..

Him: i guess we'll talk about the Black widow some day.. He stood up..

Him: i don't want your bf finding me here.. He walked to the door

Me: Charlie.. Him: Bye Flare

He closed the door behind him..

I stood up and went to bath, then put on my pjs..

I looked myself in the mirror with tears falling. I never thought love would hurt this much. What was more painful is that my friend Sophia is laying in that hospital bed, the other friendi have wants to sacrifice himself.. I mean i can't sacrifice the baby anymore especially since Clive found out about the pregnancy if i lose the baby his gonna know that I killed his baby.. I felt helpless how did my life got to be soo complicated?

I went to sit in the lounge just crying my eyes out. Such situations make me miss my mom, at least if she was here she would know how to handle this situation that I'm in..

Worse I'm keeping a deep secret from the father of my baby, I didn't wish to be me right now..

.

Clive and Zoe came after a few hours. Zoe was Sleeping on Clive's shoulder. I stood up and went up to him to get Zoe but he slightly pushed me..

Him: i got her..

I followed him to the bedroom, i opened the duvet and she laid her on the bed.. He took off Zoe's shoes too, then pulled the duvet and put it over her..

He then kissed her on her forehead

Him: Sleep peacefully knowing that you are loved

After that he walked up to the door, i was standing at the door.. Him: Where am i supposed to pass when you blocking the door? I shifted by stepping inside of the bedroom..

He exited then stood at a far distance.. He then turned around and looked at me.. He came to me i was starting to get scared..

Him: Come here!!

He grabbed me by my arm and pulled me out of the bedroom and closed the door, his grip was very tight..

Me: Clive you hurting me!

Him: So you wanna kill my baby Flare?? Me: Clive stop!!

I don't know what possessed him, but he was very angry..

We got outside and there was a car parked at the gate.. Me: Clive we can't leave Zoe alone!!

Him: She's fast asleep

He opened the passenger's door and threw me inside then banged the door hard.. My heart was beating very very fast, Clive was scaring me..

He got on the other side and started driving.. Me: Clive stop! I was now crying

Him: You wanna kill my baby Flare? Me: I'm sorry (Crying)

He was speeding, i was very scared..

Him: I'm driving this car straight into the bridge, since you wanna kill my baby we can all rather die

Me: Clive I'm sorry can we talk about this??

He didn't wanna hear anything, i have never seen Clive so angry..

As he was speeding, suddenly i saw Mishaka blocking our way. She was standing in the middle of the road, with her hair covering her face entirely.. I could see her because of the headlights..

Me: Clive watch out!! Him: Shit!!

He tried to hit the breaks but it was too late, Mishaka just raised up her hand and all i remember was the car rolling before I blacked out.

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**

PART 35

I slowly opened my eyes, there were bright lights flashing in the ceiling. It felt like i was moving, there was even some man wearing a white coat and i saw a woman too wearing scrubs. They were pushing me, i was laying on something that was moving. I heard then talking but their voices were a bit faint "We are losing her doctor".. All i remember was a car speeding and Clive, that's all i could remember..

Me: Clliiivvee..

I drifted off to lala-land after saying that.

I opened my eyes this time around and my vision didn't deceive me, although it took a while for my vision to be clear but i was aware of my environment and what was happening. I could tell that i was at the hospital..

I looked to my left, i saw a nurse fixing my IV she was even humming.. Me: Wha.. What happened?

She looked at me and gave me a warm smile. Her: You are awake

Such nurses are hard to come across these days.. She came to me and put her hand on my forehead.

Her: You have a minor fever

I remembered at that instant moment that i didn't have the accident alone.. How is Clive? How is my baby?

Me: my bab..

Her: Shhhhh Flare, the baby is fine Me: Clliiivvee?

Her: Let's not upset you, because that would upset the baby

Me: No where is Clive?

I know right now I'm probably supposed to be hating Clive but I couldn't, i was scared to hear what the nurse was about to say..

Me: Please tell me his fine..

Tears didn't favour me. I felt the pain, i felt the fear creeping up.. I didn't wanna hear the worst about Clive. I tried Moving

but i had an excruciating pain in my tight leg, all the way up to my thigh..

Nurse: Flare calm down

I held her hand, she felt a bit cold. It was not even cold in the room.. Me: Please tell me Clive is okay

Her: Okay okay I'll tell you

The Doctor walked in, interrupting our conversation he was holding a board.. Him: And you are awake

I looked at the nurse..

Her: Shhhhh

She indicated i keep quiet with her finger on her lips..

Doctor: i told this nurses to leave you alone, your leg is severely injured. I looked at the Nurse she still indicated that i keep quiet..

Him: How are you feeling? Me: Just a bit dizzy

Him: You lost alot of blood in your leg Me: Is my baby okay?

Him: You are pregnant

I nodded.. It's right there that i realised how much i care about this baby, how much i care about Clive. I lose them, i lose my family..

Him: Let's do a scan

The Nurse was Still holding my hand and smiling, it was weird how much the Doctor wasn't seeing her he was just passing her..

The doctor pressed the panic button.. Him: You have to have a nurse at all times

He grabbed a chair and set next to me while preparing everything..

He gently lifted up that night gown and put the gel on my tummy, it was a bit cold.. Him: Let's see if there's heartbeat He started scanning, i was concentrated on the monitor, i was very nervous..

That went on and on for at least sweet 50sec before i could hear a "lump-thum" sound.. Doctor: there we go, here's a

heartbeat

I was relieved, i was overwhelmed by different emotions...

Nurse: i told you Flare that you and the baby are alright Doc:

That is one healthy baby

I could feel the tears forming in my eyes..Him: Would like me to print you picture?I wiped my tears..

Me: Yes please

He stood up and went to fetch a paper towel so that i wipe my stomach.Me: Uhm Doctor

Him: Yes?

Me: i.. Did.. Did i come alone here last night?Him: No

Me: Where i.. Where is he?Him: You mean the Prince?

I nodded.. He exhaled i got concerned.

Him: Sire was badly injured, he lost alot of blood and..Me:

Please don't say it

He looked at him..

Him: What?.. Ohh no his not.. Sire is still alive butMe: But?

Him: if he wakes up from this, he might have brain damage.

He sustained alot of headtrauma, his lower jaw cracked.. His in a very critical state..

Me: Is he.. Is he gonna be okay?

Him: i cannot promise you that.. He might never wake up, we talking tomorrow he night noteven be no more..

Me: Can i see him?

Him: Let's wait for you to be better firstHe gave me the picture.

Him: You are very lucky to have survived the accident and get out with just an injury on yourleg. The car was even burning when we pulled you out..

A nurse came in..

Doctor: Nurse Smith please stay with Flare and make sure she gets everything she needs..She nodded her head. The doctor walked out..

N. Smith: Let me go and get you something to eat so you can

drink your pills Me: Thank you

She walked out..

The other nurse looked at me.. Me: Who are you?

Her: Its me Flare

I noticed her voice was Mishaka's voice Me: Why?

Him: He was going to hurt you Flare Me: So you decided to kill us?

Him: i was saving your life! Me: Zoe.. Wh

Her: i sent Naomi to look after her Me: Is Clive gonna be alright?

Her: There is nothing you can do for her Me: What do you mean

Her: i have extracted his soul from him Me: Why Mishaka?

Him: i was protecting you Me: Protecting me from what?

Her: If i didn't cause that accident he would've drove the car to the bridge and you could've died

I felt the Anger building up inside of me, the ward started trembling like there's gonna be an earthquake

Her: Flare calm down She tried touching me.

Me: Don't touch me!! (shouting)

My scream was loud, Windows started breaking, before i know it i saw Mishaka flying across the room and hitting the wall.

I was very angry.

PART 36

There whole hospital was almost in a turmoil, from my door i could see the doctors and nurses running, I'm sure they were trying to find out what caused the earthquake or they were running for their lives.. Mishaka got up from the floor..

Her: You can't hurt me I'm dead. What you can do is to stop exposing yourself.

I looked at this great ancestor of mine, and all i felt like doing was to strangle her already dead self...

Me: Go and never come back!! The doctor and the nurse came in.. Doctor: Flare are you alright?

I kept quiet and looked away, i was starring through the broken window... Nurse: What really happened here?

Doctor: it looks like The earthquake has destroyed Flare'a ward only.

The Nurse picked up my IV.. The doctor got a Guaze and put it on my hand where the IV was planted, i was bleeding from that Area..

I heard them talking, but their voices fell on deaf ears..

A week passed with me being in hospital. I didn't eat, i didn't talk to anyone i didn't want anything to do with anything..

I didn't feel pain anymore, i was numb..

Zoe and Charlie came to see me, they looked happy to see me.. Zoe ran up to me, but the bed was too high for her to hop on it.. Her: Flare!!

I just looked at her, i didn't know what to say i had no words.

Charlie: We brought you some fruits..

I could see their lips moving but I couldn't comprehend what they where saying. Charlie: Flare I'm truly sorry about what happened

I looked at him..

Me: a week has passed, i.. No one says anything about Clive,

where is he Charlie? How is he?

Charlie: Flare i..I held his hand..

Me: You.. Need to find him, we need to skip the country they coming for us.. He looked at me as if like, i was losing my mind..

Charlie: Flare..

Me: No!! They coming to kill us Zoe held on tight to Charlie's leg.. Zoe: She's scaring me

All i could hear, all i could think about was Clive. My whole being was consumed by him..

Me: 4..5..A..B..R..

Charlie: I think i should call the nurse I heard a voice saying "No"..

I looked at the Doorway it was Naomi.. Me: Naomi I'm glad you are here

Naomi: Can you guys give us some space Charlie and Zoe walked out..

Me: Clive Naomi, how is he?? I can't get anything on him.. I was Shaking, i was biting my nails..

The Doctor walked in.. Doctor: Who are you? Naomi: I am Naomi

He gave the doctor a handshake Doctor: Do you know Flare?

Her: That's a Rhetorical question Doctor, Ofcause i know Flare i am her guardian... Doctor: As you can see, Flare's state of mentality is no..

Me: Code 453286415..

I heard a lot of voices in my head, i didn't know which one to listen too Naomi: Doctor i assure you, Flare is not insane She looked at me..

Her: She's just a little girl who once loved someone with all her heart She then looked at the doctor...

Her: Have you been inlove Doctor that being separated from your better half drives

you crazy?

Have you had the fear of the unknown, not knowing what's happening to your better half..

Doctor: No..

Naomi: Their hearts are connected by the unborn..

Doctor: that doesn't mean anything, Flare still needs to be transferred to a mental institution where she could get the help that she needs. We cannot do anything for her here.

This hospital only has General practitioners and nurses, we don't have Psychiatrists..

Naomi: Doctor please give her one more week, if still no progress you can send her there.. But now, i think she needs to hear a voice that she recognises..

The doctor looked at me, then Naomi. Doctor: Just one more week

Naomi: Thank you

He then walked away..

Me: Naomi they won't let me see him She brushed my hair..

Her: i know

Me: i wanna see him..

She walked and closed the door..

She came back and touched my hand..

I don't what happened but i saw myself in a pure white room, i was wearing pure white. I looked around, the walls and everything was pure white.. All i remember is Naomi touching my hand, what happened after i don't know..

I heard a voice saying "Malady"

I was praying that my mind wasn't deceiving me, i slowly turned around and he was standing there..

He was wearing a white shirt and white pants..with his ever beautiful smile Me: Clive

He smiled at Me.. We started walking to meet each other halfway.. I touched him, he was real, it was him..

Me: What's happening Clive He put his hand on my cheek..

Him: We don't have much time He looked at me

Him: i need you to be well for me, i need you to save me..

Me: Save you? Where are you?

Him: only you can save me from Mishaka's wrath Me: Clive...

He took off his icon necklace and put it around my neck

Him: This will remind you of the love we share, this will keep you sane.. Me: i don't understand

He came closer and kissed me... Him: i love you Flare

Me: Clive wait..

Him: Its time for you to go He stepped back a bit..

I heard someone calling my name, i slowly opened my eyes and saw Naomi with Nurse Smith..

Nurse: Are you alright Flare?

I ran my hand on my neck and i felt the necklace.. Nurse: Where did you get that?

I touched the pendant it was engraved "F4C" and all i could hear were the words "Save me Flare" ..

PART 37

Time went and i was recovering very well at the hospital. My leg didn't hurt that much anymore. I had been holding to the necklace that Clive gave me, it gave me strength each and every day. I didn't have a choice, I needed to be strong for me. Although me and him were in the same hospital, but i couldn't see him. The Queen didn't want me coming in contact with Clive, she blamed me for what happened. The biggest question that paused in her mind was me and Clive being in the same car. She wanted to know what i was doing with him in his car....

She blamed me for everything, said I'm the one who caused the accident, i wanted to kill his son you know she was just being her usual bitter self... She had bodyguards outside his ward, the only thing i could do is to see him through his window, and even so i have to do that when she's not around...

The biggest fuckery of them all is that she even fired me, the Queen just grew soo much hate for me of which i don't even know why..

Today Naomi and Zoe were fetching me from the hospital, i was looking forward to going home i was tired of this hospital, I've been here for a very long time..

I signed my discharge papers, the doctor gave me some vitamin pills and folic acid, he also gave me pain killers but suspension of that because i couldn't just drink any pills since I'm pregnant..

Doctor: You must be happy that you going home Me: i am, not that I didn't like staying here just..

Him: i understand you don't have to make me feel better..

We all laughed... Nurse Smith came in with a wheelchair. Me: Is that Necessary?

Her: Let me take care of you for the last time..

I like Nurse Smith, she was very nice to me throughout my stay here.. I got out of bed and sat on the wheelchair

Naomi: Sleeping all day Everyday you surely have gained weight
Me: Stop playing

Nurse Smith wheeled me out.. As we were walking down that Corridor, we bumped into the Queen and Princess Maxima.. The Queen gave me a sinister look that made me feel very uncomfortable..

From her look i could just tell that this woman hates me with passion.. Naomi put her hand on my shoulder.

Her: Don't worry about it

What was in my mind, was for me to save Clive....

It was hard being forbidden to set my foot at the Royal house, it was more hard when she forbid me to see Clive or Sophia.

We got a cab that drove us straight home..

We got home, and Nancy had prepared a delicious meal for me. I was surprised that she was still coming to look after Zoe. I will have to let her go because Clive is not here anymore to pay her, and i had lost my job.. I really didn't know what Zoe and i were gonna do since i don't have a job anymore..

Nancy: i am soo happy to see you
Me: You shouldn't have

Her: i figured that you would prefer a home cooked meal, i know hospital food is not good...

Me: Thank you very much
Her: You welcome

We all sat in the lounge, Nancy dished up for us and we ate. She even bought a cake and snacks was just a nice home cooked meal...

After that meal, she even insisted in Washing Dishes.. That gave me time to talk to Naomi.

Me: So how do we save Clive?

Her: Its very easy, we give The black widow what she wants and everything goes back to how they were.

Me: That's gonna save Clive? Her: Yes both Clive and Sophia

Me: i never thought it was gonna be that easy

Her: Everything that happened was a result of what you did.

Clive was possessed by an Ancient spirit one that had a vendetta with the Royal family

Me: The Royal family has alot of dead enemies.

Her: That is why the curtain has to be closed so that more spirits cannot come to seek revenge against the Royal family because this has gone on for a long time now.

Me: That is True

Her: Are you still gonna Sacrifice your baby?

Me: Charlie said he will sacrifice himself to make up for what he did apparently he wants to pay for his sins.

Her: Then we can to the ritual tomorrow morning, at 3am

Me: I'll let him know

Nancy entered... Her: Miss Flare

I looked at her.. She handed me an envelope

Her: it came for you when you were at the hospital..

It was from the courts. I couldn't read what the letter says, my reading skills are poor..

Me: I'll read it later now I'm tired.

Nancy: Anything else you would like me to help you with before i go? Me: No thank you

Her: I'll see you tomorrow

Me: uhm Nancy about that there's something i need to talk to you about..

Her: i know that you lost your job and you cannot pay me.. But i pike helping you around so i don't mind working for free

Me: You are far too kind

She smiled and went to get her bag....

I didn't do much for the rest of the day, i was just chill chilled and thinking. I had called Charlie he said he will come at

around 20:00. It's amazing how he was so eager to give his life away, I didn't sense any sadness or fear from his voice as i called him.....

Charlie did come at 20:00,by then i had bathe Zoe and put her in bed. I made tea and we sat at the kitchen.

Him: How are you feeling? Me: I'm hanging there I sipped on my coffee. I didn't tell Charlie about saving Clive he hates Clive so I'm scared he might withdraw...

Me: Are you ready?

Him: one can never be ready for such. I never thought that my life would end like this, i never thought that i would know about my death..

Me: Look Charlie if you wanna pull out i..

Me: i have to do this Flare, i have to make things right..

This was very hard on me, Losing my friend of soo many years is not easy...

3am finally struck the clock. I didn't sleep at all i was too nervous, i was scared i don't know how this is gonna turn out but it has to be done. I had given Zoe panado and it knocked her off. I couldn't have her seeing what was gonna take place...

We were in the lounge floor, we had the book of spells we drew a red line in the middle of the room that divided the room into two..

We had shifted the furniture, everything was planned out correctly... We were kneeling on the floor, Naomi read out the spell..

Naomi: "In space in time and from the work below. Hear us now as we summon the Black widow"

On the other side of the line on the wall there was a tunnel, a black and scary tunnel.. I thought the black widow was gonna show up as her usual self but she didn't, instead she

was standing in the middle of the tunnel..

Black widow: a soul for s soul to amend your wrongs...

Charlie stood up, i am not going to lie this was very difficult. I stood up too.. I saw tears falling down from him.

Him: You have been a very good friend to me Flare, i don't if you miss people when you dead but I'm surely gonna miss you..

I couldn't stop tears from my side too... Me: i am going to miss you too

We hugged each other, i felt like a piece of me was going the pain i was feeling i couldn't compare it to anything..

Charlie walked to the tunnel, before he could cross the red line the black widow came out from the tunnel.. She was talker than i thought, this woman had all sorts of misery surrounding her.

Her: Stop Charlie stopped..

Her: You are not Royal, a royal blood must be sacrificed Me: i thought you said a life for a life

Her: A royal blood is needed

Naomi: There has to be another way Her: There is no other way

Charlie: Take me I'm ready Black widow: You are not worth it

That means I'll have to sacrifice my baby i have no choice, Clive's life was very important to me at that important

Me: I'll sacrifice my baby Her: Come forth

Charlie: Flare no!

Me: Charlie i have made up my mind

I walked forth. I wasn't ready for this, was i even doing the right thing.. As i got close to the Red line i was feeling cold i was coming face to face with death.. Before i crossed i heard a voice saying

"I'll do it Flare. If you do it you will die together with the baby. You have a sister that needs you"

Black widow: I can smell the Royal blood running in your veins
Voice: i am Royalty

I turned around and i couldn't believe who wanted to sacrifice their life for us, my heart stopped beating for a second. My knees were weak..

PART 38

I couldn't believe what i was seeing. I looked at her, she wasn't in a human form, she was an apparition(ghost). She was glowing, she was in peace. Her voice was even smooth and there was calmness in it, it was Princess Sophia.

Me: Phia

Her: Let me go Flare, let me do this

Me: No Phia. I'm gonna save you from all of this, I'm trying to save you and Clive i will find a way..

Her: You have a warm heart Flare, but this is beyond you. I have been out of my body for a while now, my soul needs peace.

Sophia was the only person who became a friend to me when i first started working at the Royal house. She is a sister to me, she's everything to me..

Her: You cannot always save the world, some other things are beyond you.. She started walking to the Black widow.

Me: Phia no!!!

Charlie held me back tight... She looked at me and smiled.

Her: Bye Flare

She crossed the line, and that was the end of Sophia..

Naomi: It is done

Me: Nooooo (Crying)

The pain i felt, you couldn't even imagine it. I was heartbroken to another level, especially knowing that I'll never see her ever again..

Charlie sat me down on the couch..

Charlie: Is everything back to how it's supposed to be?

Naomi: Yes, the Curtain is closed

That didn't matter anymore, what mattered was that i lost a dear friend of mine..

Days went by, Sophia's funeral was announced everywhere.

Papers, Television, radio, pamphlets and etc. It was gonna be after a week or so...

It still wasn't sinking in to me that Sophia is gone, I was still in shock and all that.. Nancy came with a bowl of porridge i was sitting in the lounge..

Her: You need to eat something miss Flare. Me: Thank you Nancy but I'm not really hungry.

Her: i know how much this is hurting you, but please eat something.. Me: i don't think food will enter at this point.

Her: She....

There was a knock at the door... Nancy: I'll get it

She stood up and went to open.. Her: Your highness
Your highness? Who is it?

I saw the Queen coming in the room. She was wearing a dress that was just slightly below the knee level, she was wearing a long coat, and heels. She was also wearing a hat and was holding a clutch bag. She looked beautiful as always, i wish her heart was just as beautiful... She looked around the room as if like she wasn't supposed to be here..

I stood up, although she's evil but respect is what she always has to be given. Me: Your highness

I bowed..

Her: i am here because.. She cleared her Throat..

Her: Clive has woken up, and he wants to see you.

My heart jumped at that moment, Clive was awake. I felt a sense of joy inside, i wanted to see him, i had to see him..

Me: i would like to see him too your Highness Her: Just stop it!

Her facial expression wasn't sincere..

Her: i know about the affair, he told me that you and her have been seeing each other.

I kept quiet because i didn't know how to address her, or what to say. Her: What have you done to my son? What hold do you have on him? Me: i don't understand

Her: Let me tell you something. You are going to see Clive, and tell him to forget about you. Tell him that you don't wanna be with him..

I looked at her, for a moment i didn't fear her.

Me: i cannot do that, you don't understand the love that we share. She slapped me.. I felt the rage building up inside of me..

Her: Have you no shame? Do you know the embarrassment that you gonna bring to the Royal family? "A soon to be king is having an affair with a servant"

She spat on me, like literary spat on me...

Her: i will never allow a Useless tramp servant like you to be anything in the Royal house.. This little fantasy you have get it out of your head!!

After saying that she walked away.. Nancy came to me.

Her: The Queen has no shame, I'm sorry Miss Flare her day will come. I went to the bathroom to wash my face..

Not being able to see Clive was gonna kill me, but i cannot risk going to see him at the hospital was gonna be something else..

Sophia's funeral came, i only saw it on Tv since i wasn't allowed to go and lay her to rest. As i saw her Coffin being lowered into that grave, dawned on me that she's gone forever. My heart sank as her coffin went down. That's the End of Sophia... I'm never gonna see her ever again.

They showed the Queen, then they showed Clive. I even stood up when i saw him. He did look like he was in pain, he had a walking stick with him.. Had a few bruises on his face. I put my hand over my mouth was just overwhelming seeing him, it brought about different emotions...

Nancy: Such a beautiful funeral.

Me: Clive.. Look at him, there's Clive. Her: He looks like his recovering well... Me: He is..

I was so relieved and happy to see Clive, to see that his fine. I

was hoping he would come and see me but he hasn't it's been a few days now..

Charlie had taken me and Zoe out to eat life has been hard for us, not working and having any income coming in was very hard.. Charlie and Nancy were helping us financially. Nancy was truly a blessing to us..

Me: Charlie what am i going to do? Charlie: something will come up Flare

Me: i hope so, I mean i have another baby on the way and then Zoe, and I'm being sued it's just too much..

Charlie: Hey hey don't stress, I'm here I'll help Me: i know, and thank you..

We chilled a bit at the mall, then later we went home...

Charlie had things to do so he didn't stop by at my place...

We got to my place and I was astonished to see lots of groceries at the kitchen. Me: Nancy what is all of this?

She was putting everything in the cupboards etc..

Nancy: This grocery will not fit in the cupboards i don't know where to put the rest.. Me: What is going on?

Clive showed up at the doorway. Zoe was happy to see him she ran to him.. Zoe: Uncle Clive

He kneeled on one knee and opened his arms, she ran to hug him.. She was crying that's how happy she was to see him..

Him: You missed me? She nodded her head..

Clive: Don't cry.. Uncle Clive was gonna pick you up but his not feeling well

He got up and Zoe held on to his legs, he was brushing her on his back.. He looked at me. I couldn't stop the tears too.

He opened his arms.. Him: Come here

I slowly went up to him, i never thought I'll be in his arms ever again.. Him: Everything is gonna be alright, I'm here now..

I was very happy to see him.

PART 40

I thought Clive was kidding, but he was serious about telling the Queen. So there we were later that day at around 17:00 on our way to the Royal house going to inform the Queen. I had asked Nancy to look after Zoe for a few minutes, i didn't want her to witness what was about to happen....

I was very nervous in the car, knowing the Queen she would probably kill me there.. I looked at Clive, he was calm about the whole situation.. I was praying that at least the Queen be understanding about this whole situation...

We got to the Royal house and Walked up to the door. I took a few steps then I stopped, i was scared. Clive stopped too and looked at me.

Me: i don't think i can do this..

He came to me and held my hand.. Him: Let's go..

We walked to the door again and opened it then walked in. We found the Queen and Princess Maxima sitting in the kitchen, well the Queen wasn't sitting. She was pacing up and down.

Queen: Clive we.. She looked at me...

Queen: What Is she doing here? She's not welcomed here! I looked down, while still holding on to Clive's hand... Clive:

Can we go to the lounge and talk

Queen: Clive what is going on?

Clive: Can we please be civil about this mother? The Queen looked at him.

Clive: Let's go to the lounge, and talk about this. Queen: Fine..

We all walked to the lounge...we got there and I sat down next to Clive, i didn't wanna Leave his side. The Queen was looking at me as if like she wanted to kill me immediately, she was sitting opposite us with Princess Maxima.

Clive: i would like to discuss an important issue with you We all kept quiet..

Clive: You know that Flare and i have been seeing each other for a while now

Her: Yes i know dear and i forgive you. Princess Maxima has forgiven you too it was just an infa..

Clive: Let me finish please! He was getting irritated...

Clive: it was not an infatuation. Queen: What are you trying to say?

Clive: I love Flare, i love her with all my heart and.. She's also pregnant..

That really hit the Queen hard, she couldn't let that register in her brain. Nobody dared to Say anything, there was silence in the room

Queen: Excuse me what did you say?

She put her hand on the couch's arm and leaned forward, as if like she didn't believe what Clive just said.....

Maxima: i think he said she's pregnant...

Queen: i think i heard that too.. Clive took a deep breath..

Clive: i think we should inform the council about this, because i wanna make Flare my wife mother..

Queen: That will never happen! Flare will never be a Queen! She's not Royalty, she doesn't have the qualities of being a Queen!!.. She is a servant for heaven's sake!!!.. She shouting her lungs out, age was very angry...

Clive: i see you don't wanna be civil about this..

Queen: There is no way I'm gonna be civil about this!.. Who knows maybe she purposely fell pregnant to earn her spot in this family!!!.

Ohw wow!!..

The Queen looked at me..

Her: You will terminate that pregnancy immediately!..

Clive looked at her, he was boiling i could see from the way that he was holding my hand, it was a tight grip!..

Clive: You wanna kill my child?

Queen: You will have alot of children with Princess Maxima!!

Clive looked at me..

Him: Let's go We stood up...

Queen: Clive!! Clive!..

We walked out of the room with the Queen still screaming behind us.. Queen: Clive you are to come back here now!!!

That fell on deaf ears as we made our way to the car....

The car slowly drove away.. Clive took out his phone and started making calls.. One minute his talking calmly then the next minute he is yelling, and all i hear is England, South Africa, Paris, New York.. It dawned on me that we might be skipping the country..

We get home, and Clive took of his jacket and threw it on the couch..

Him: All i want is for her to Accept you and try to get along with you!! Am i asking for the world?..

His pacing up and down in the lounge very furious.. Nancy walks in the room, from the bedroom..

Nancy: Miss Flare

My attention is now focused on her, She's holding her bag..

Me: Its fine you can go.

Her: Thank you. Me: Where is Zoe?

Her: She's playing tea party in the bedroom with her dolls..

Me: Thank you soo much Nancy

Her: I'll see you tomorrow..

She smiles at me then walks out.. Clive sits down on the couch. I don't wanna say anything, the last time that he was this angry he almost drove us straight to the bridge.. His breathing heavily... I don't wanna lie at that moment i was very Scared.. Suddenly There's a knock at the door, i leave the room and go to answer the door.

It's Charlie his Standing at the door step.... This is just

Perfect. I step out and close the door..

Him: i have movie tickets take Zoe and we'll go Me: Shhhhh
keep your voice down

Him: Why?

I'm standing there and hoping that Clive doesn't show up..

Me: Keep your voice down

Charlie: I don't understand (Whispering)

Me: Charlie this is not a good time (Whispering) Him: Why
(Whispering)

Me: Its just not a good time, look I'll call you (Whispering)

Him: Open the door, go get ready and.. Me: Please go I'll call
you! (yelling)

He sees how serious i am, Charlie can be very irritating
sometimes.. Him: Okay then, guess I'll call you..

He comes closer and hugs me, then after he makes his way
to the gate... I open the door and go back inside..

Clive is still sitting on that couch, his eyes are now fixed on
me, with his hands on his mouth while balancing his elbows
on his tighs..

Him: Was that your friend Charlie?

I don't know the appropriate answer, i don't know what to
say i don't wanna piss him off more than he already is..

I shake my head no.. He looks at me again, I could feel his
stare piercing through my skin..

Him: So you just gonna stand there and lie to me?

I get very scared now, I could sense the seriousness and the
authority in his voice.. Him: Flare!! (yelling)

That makes me jump a little, while we in the mist of what
seems to be an argument, Zoe walks in she's yawning and
rubbing her eyes..

Her: Flare i wanna bath and sleep.. I'm a bit relieved..

Me: Ofcause.. Let's get you ready for bed.. Clive looks at
her..

Clive: Come and Say Goodnight to Uncle Clive..

She walks up to him and gives him a hug. No matter how angry Clive can be, but his always good with Zoe...

Him: i love you okay Zoe: i love you too

She comes back to me, i hold her hand.. and we go to the bathroom.. Me: Go get your towel

She walks to the bedroom to get her towel and i run her water, as I sit at the edge of the bathtub. i can't stop the tears... Im thinking to myself that Clive and i we back to square one.. I cover my face with my hands so Zoe doesn't see me crying when she comes back..

After a while i smell his cologne.. i feel hands lowering mine. His crouching right infront of me. He looks at me and start kissing my tears..

Him: I'm sorry....

His stroking my hair, then Holds my hands and start kissing them.. Him: I'm truly sorry..

He plants a kiss on my lips....Clive can be both a jerk and a gentleman at the same time..

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**

PART 41

As much as i thought that we were gonna skip the country, unfortunately we didn't.. Clive didn't wanna give in to the Queen, he felt that it was unfair for us to go settle down far away just because of someone who doesn't have authority anymore.. Yes! Clive's word matters more than the Queen's, he is soon to be the Next king and Knowing the history of The white family only men have ruled and not women...The Queen will forever remain the Queen, but without authority and power....

Clive has called a meeting with the council so that they could review our situation, he really was going to great lengths in making me his wife.....

So there i was sitting in front of the council, having those Queens and Kings Looking at me in some type of way.. I was looking down, i couldn't make eye contact with any of them. From how they were looking at me, i felt like i was in the museum or Zoo.. I was sitting in the middle of the room, they were sitting all around me, the room was more like an Auditorium with chairs all around.....the elder of the council stood up to address the matter....

Elder: We are gathered here because of a dire issue..Prince Clive who is soon to be Sire has been in the Garden of evil, he has tasted the forbidden fruit..

Ohh wow so I'm Eve now..

Him: He has brought shame to the whole of Royalty by sleeping with and impregnating a Servant..

The council started sighing, some where throwing in hurtful comments... Him: as if like that was not enough, he now wants to marry this servant!!!

They were booing, they were spitting at me, they just said alot of hurtful things that i couldn't hold back my tears.....

Elder: i will sit down and let him speak for himself... Clive

stood up, he leaned over on that balcony.....

Clive: firstly i would like to thank the council for coming here to review this case.. I know that i have disappointed my family, i have disappointed all Royalty as whole..I am ashamed of how things are, i am ashamed of how things turned out, but one thing that I am not ashamed off, is loving Flare.....

Things were now spiralling out of control, i heard comments such as "it's a curse loving a Servant".. All i wished for at that moment was for this whole meeting to be adjourned...

Clive: that is an honest truth i love Flare, and i wanna make her my wife.. Unlike Princess Maxima Flare will give me children, she is even carrying an heir to the Throne...

We were all a bit dumbfounded by that comment, what did Clive mean?.. I looked around and i saw that a few faces were confused too..

Clive: i have medical reports in my hand proving that Princess Maxima is a barren... Shock and confusion started filling up the room, the atmosphere changed.. I looked at Princess Maxima she was turning on that chair, even the Queen herself looked at her all shocked....

The elder of the council stood up.. Him: We were not aware of that!!

He turned and looked at Maxima's father, who couldn't say anything for himself or even defend his daughter.....

This was truly a turn of events.. As i was still sitting there trying to process all that was said, i suddenly felt a cold breeze.. The hairs at the back of my neck stood up.. When such happens it only means one thing, an apparition is around... I looked around the room and i could feel it's presence, i just didn't know who it was...

I tried my best to ignore what was happening, i didn't wanna raise any red flags about my gift at least not now...

Clive: will i be correct if i said Princess Maxima is unfit to be a

Queen, she is lacking something important and that is giving me an heir to the Throne.. She cannot give me someone who will succeed me one day...

Princess Maxima was starting to get very emotional, she stood up and went out running with the Queen following her.. I saw Clive having a smirk on his face, he really nailed it where it hurts the most.....

Elder: We can all go out for a bit, have something to drink and eat while the elders remain to discuss the verdict.....

Everyone started walking out, i stood up too and went out..

I couldn't dine with the Royalties so i was standing at the kitchen all alone, when Clive walked in.. He came to me and gave me a warm tight hug..

Him: I'm sorry about what happened in there Me: Its alright He kissed me on my forehead.. Him: Did you eat something? I shook my head no..

Me: I'm scared that if i eat something I'll vomit, i am very nervous about the verdict.. Him: i understand sweetheart.. We remained in the kitchen, until we were summoned again to the auditorium, the council had made their verdict.... Walking to the auditorium was the longest walk of my life, i have never been this nervous about anything before.. I love Clive and i hope that the council will be lenient about this whole situation..

The elder of the council stood up again..

Him: i welcome the council once more.. This was a very difficult matter to make a verdict on, but after what was presented to us i think we have come to a constructive decision....

Princess Maxima was sitting there, her eyes were Red, her cheeks were Red it was like she had been crying the whole time.. The Queen was comforting her, she had her hand around her shoulders..

Elder: We have come to a decision that Clive and Flare will get married, we accept their marriage..

Okay, let's rewind back a little did he say what i thought he said???

Elder: madam Flare is carrying Royalty, she has the Royal blood running thorough her veins.. She can give Prince Clive many children... But, we cannot ignore the fact that she's not from a Royal family and we know the rules, Royalty must always marry Royalty.... Clive will Marry both Princess Maxima and Madam Flare. Princess Maxima will remain the first and Royal wife...you are to love them both, you are to treat them both the same way.. That is the verdict that the council has made.....

I wasn't bothered by Maxima marrying Clive too, what remains is that Clive and i we will always and forever love each other.. My heart was jumping, i wished that i could stand up and scream in excitement but i contained myself.. As i was sitting there, i heard a voice speaking all around the room which said "We made it Flare, we made it" i then saw a white dove flying around,i knew then that Sophia had been part of this whole meeting.....

As comments were flying around, people were still trying to process what was said, some couldn't believe that tradition was being broken.. I saw the Queen standing up, she cleared her Throat..

Queen: i would like to make a request..

All eyes were now fixed on her, she was making me nervous there's just something sinister about this woman..

Her: i have known Flare for a long time now, she has worked for us since from when she was 14.

I wish that she could just make her point already..

Her: i think it's important for all us to know who Flare is, We wanna know what kind of a family she comes from and we wanna know her surname before we can proceed with this wedding arrangement....

That was a blow in the face. How do i begin to tell them that i am from the Versini family, a family full of witches..

PART 42

All eyes were on me. I didn't know what to say, my mouth was dry, my throat raised no words.. I kept on clearing my throat trying to get in touch with my inner voice but, it was deceiving me..

Lord is this how I'm gonna die? Is this the real death of me? There is no point in lying. If i lie they will want proof, it's best i tell the truth it's now or never....

I opened my mouth, i couldn't hear my own voice. Yes i was talking but i couldn't hear myself it was almost as if like i was deaf...

Me: i.. My.. I am.. Fla.. My..

I took a deep breath.. Nothing is gonna save me, let me just be out with the truth.. Me: My name is...

Voice: "Flare Fernandez-Lancelot"

Did i hear right?.. That sounded like a familiar voice i just didn't know where it came from..

As we were lost like that, We heard footsteps approaching the whole council, i turned around to look who it was and it was Naomi. She was holding a scroll in her left hand...

Naomi: Flare Fernandez-Lancelot, the Granddaughter of the Great Sir-Lancelot herself. I have the document to prove it... She went to the Elder, and handed him the scroll.....

The council elder opened the scroll, then put on his glasses and started reading.. The whole room was very quiet, no movement, no sound just breathing.. My heart was doing 360 revolutions per second, i felt my urine being close by.. One mistake and my bladder is gonna give up on me.....

After reading the scroll, the Council elder took off his glasses and rolled the scroll then looked at us..

Him: This does prove to be true. She is the Granddaughter of the Great Sir- Lancelot..

My heart sank at that moment after hearing that. Naomi has gotten away with this lie, but how many lies are we gonna have to tell until we get busted. Until the truth finally comes out....

I glanced up in the balcony looking at the Queen. She was still standing there, probably having other questions to crucify me..

Queen: i never knew that Sir-Lancelot had a Granddaughter, i know him to only have grandsons..

The council elder looked at her.. Him: Its here in black and white..

Queen: The Lancelot family is known for their wealth. Sir-Lancelot was a well known and a successful Doctor in the whole of Callanine. When he passed on, he left his family quite a fortune. Why was Flare our maid if she comes from such a wealthy Family??...

Ohhh wow couldn't Naomi choose a less famous person, couldn't she at least choose a mere family..

I wanted to intervene, i wanted to support Naomi's statement but i didn't have much information to sustain this statement...

Naomi still maintained her calmness, she didn't show any signs of being nervous, or moved by the Queen's statement or even intimated that the Queen asked that. She gave out a side smile, she looked at the Queen with that kind of look that says "Bitchi swear if you don't sit down"

Naomi: Flare was conceived out of wedlock. Unfortunately because of that her mother was Disowned by her family forcing her to go and be independent, to start a life of her own away from her family...

I looked at the Queen, it looked like that statement shut her up. She had nothing to say after that but to sit her Royal Ass down..

I looked at Naomi smiling, she smiled at me too.. The council

elder spoke again..

Him: All that was supposed to be said has been said. I think this adjourns our meeting for today. The next time that we gonna meet her again is when we crown Clive as King of Callanine officially...

I looked at Clive, he winked at me. Finally we made it!!!

2 days after the meeting with the council i had to pack my clothes, together with Zoe's clothes. We were to permanently move in at the Royal house..

Naomi was gonna come along with us, as my Guardian i am going to need her by my side 24/7 to guide me and Zoe. Especially Zoe because she hasn't got a hang of her powers as yet..

It wasn't easy leaving my mother's house. Moving out felt as if like i am leaving all her memories behind, and this is the only home i have ever known all my life...

I wish i could say that i left the book of spells behind but i didn't because i am going to need it in the long run... I am a witch and i need that to help me fight evil.. Although i was very nervous about moving in with the Royal family, but i was also excited. I mean this is a big deal for me and Clive, we don't have to hide anymore our relationship is out in the open...

A car came by to drive us to the Royal house. I was in the car with Naomi and Zoe.. Zoe held my hand and smiled at me..

Her: Are you ready?

I took a deep breath before answering.. Me: i think so.

Her: Just remember one thing, you not entering the Royal house as a maid anymore, but you entering the Royal house as a Queen..

I looked down, tears fell down..

Naomi: What's wrong? I thought you'll be happy.. I raised my

head up and looked at her..

Me: it just hasn't sank in. I mean who would've thought that one day me Flare a mere servant i am gonna be the Queen of Callanine.

Her: Fate always has justice for all of us, this is your moment enjoy it.. Naomi was right, this is my moment and a great one for that matter....

We got to the Royal house, and i was surprised to see a red carpet being rolled out outside all the way to the door..

Guards were called to get our things and i picked Zoe up..

Every guard i passed addressed me as "Your highness" it was gonna take a while for me to get used to that..

We approached the door and i was a bit nervous, i mean this is it.. This is gonna be my home from now on..

We opened the door and went inside...everyone was at at kitchen awaiting our arrival. I saw cooks going up and down cooking, it was just busy.. Clive approached us..

Him: Welcome home Your highness.. I looked at him..

Me: Your highness?

Him: You see how it feels when someone calls you that.. He took Zoe from me...

Him: How are you doing Princess? Zoe: I'm okay

Clive: Do you know that now you are a real Princess? Zoe: No..

Clive: You are a Princess and Flare is a Queen.. Zoe: Can i be Queen Elizabeth?

Clive chuckled..

Him: Yes Queen You can be Queen Elizabeth.. Clive looked one of the servants...

Clive: Gwen can you take Queen Elizabeth here and Show her to her room.. He was Busy tickling Zoe, Zoe was laughing hysterical..

Gwen: Yes your highness....

She walked up to Clive and took Zoe then they walked upstairs..

The Queen gave me a deadly look, Lord this woman was boiling inside, she was fuming... She looked at me....

Queen: Welcome home... She coughed..

Queen: Welcome home Your highness..

Those words were hard for her to say.. Maxima was standing i couldn't read her emotions if she was hurt, or sad...she just didn't show no emotion...

The Queen looked at one of the servants..

Queen: Can one of you girls show her majesty to her bedroom, I'm sure she's tired.. Clive: Its fine I'll take her..

I looked at Naomi..

Naomi: Go ahead I'll be fine..

I looked at Clive. He leaned closer and pecked my lips, I'm sure she wanted to piss off the Queen who was bloated like a frog now, all that was left was for her to jump around and make those irritating sounds...

Clive held my hand and we walked to my room..

He wasn't allowed to share his bedroom with me or Princess Maxima, we all had separate bedrooms...

We got to my bedroom and he opened the door then i stepped in. I immediately fell in love with it, everything was Gold it was a bedroom fit for a Queen.. Clive closed the door then came and hugged me from behind..

Him: Do you like it?

Me: i love it, it's perfect.. Him: And i love you..

It was indeed a perfect bedroom. Everything was neat and it was very clean.. Clive turned me around so that we could face each other..

He leaned over for a passionate kiss..

He was squeezing my soon to be round waist close to him..

Me: Not so tight

He loosened his grip..

Him: I'm sorry, I've just missed you I smiled at him..

Me: ive missed you too..

We continued kissing, then he picked me up and we approached the bed..i guess we are about to have Royal sex..

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**

PART 43

We were laying side by side after our passionate love making. He was trying to catch his breath and so was I. I got closer and laid my head on his chest. He started playing with my hair while kissing me on my forehead.

Him: You alright your highness?

I lifted my head up, and looked at him. Me: I still can't get used to that.

He leaned over and pecked my lips.

As we were laying there having our own private romantic moment, we were disturbed by a knock at the door. We looked at each other.

Me: Uhm one second.

I tried getting out of bed, but he pulled me back to him. Me: There's someone at the door

Him: Let's let them in

Me: Stop being crazy we are in bed naked

Him: The bed covers are covering our naked bodies. Me: Stop being crazy Clive.

He looked at the door. Him: Come in!

I cannot believe he just said that especially in our state of being nude. The door opened and Gwen walked in, she was stutled to see us in bed with the covers covering our lower bodies only.

Gwen: Oh my.. I.. please forgive me your highness I wasn't...

She looked away, she was a bit embarrassed but not as much as I was. Me: It's okay Gwen. You can come back later.

Clive: Ya Later as in like 30min later I hit him on his shoulder.

Him: What? Me: Stop it!.

Gwen: Yes your highness, I will come back later. She started walking to the door and exited.

After Gwen exited the room, Clive looked at me. Me: so

where were we?

Me: We supposed to get out of bed Him: just one more round..

He pulled Me closer and kissed me.. While running his hands on my smooth naked body. I could get used to this life, always being with the one I love and not having to hide our relationship anymore. It truly is a blessing.....

As we were busy kissing, i heard a voice saying "Excuse me" .. I tried ignoring but it kept on going on and on.." Excuse me Malady" ...I couldn't ignore it anymore, i glanced at the door and there was a little girl standing there. She looked like she was around 11 years old.. Her presence stutled me that i fell off the bed..

Clive leaned from the edge of the bed.. Him: Are you okay?

Me: Ya i think so..

I got up and took the sheet then rolled it around my body. I then looked at the little girl, there was just something off about her.. Her attire was ancient, she looked like she was a Princess judging from the necklace that went around her forehead to the back of her head...

Her: You can see me right?

I was trying soo hard to ignore her, i didn't wanna raise any suspicion that will alert Clive to suspect me of being a sorcerer....

Him: What are you looking at?

I looked at him, he was also looking at me waiting for an answer.. Me: Uhm i..

The little girl started talking..

Her: i am thrilled that there is someone who can see me. I am trying to find my way home..

Clive looked at me too..

Him: Flare what's going on? What are you looking at?

I heard both their voices playing in my head, i couldn't listen to either they were just overpowering me, i was getting

dizzy, i felt like i was going to vomit.. I then quickly ran into the bathroom and vomited in the basin..

Clive came in after a while as i was rinsing my mouth..

He got closer and started pulling my hair to the back, so they don't mix with the vomit..

Him: What's wrong Malady? Are you sick should i call the house Doctor? I was still dizzy.. He pulled Me closer and hugged me tight...

Me: Come let's get you in bed.. He started walking me to the bed..

As we walked out of the bathroom to the bedroom, the little girl was now seated on my bed...

Her: Forgive me i didn't mean to stuttle you..

Each time that I heard her voice, it would play in my head and make me dizzy.. I held on to Clive because at that instant i felt like i was going to faint..

Clive: Okay that is it, I'm calling the doctor He picked me up and placed me on the bed.. Me: Clive..

I was dizzy, i also felt light headed, i was hot and i was sweating too.. Clive: I'll be right back

He put on his clothes and ran out of the room as quickly as possible to get help.. The little girl got closer to me...

Her: i need to get home

Me: Who.. What.. Who are you? Her: My name is..

Before she could finish, the door flung open. I slowly turned my head to see who it was, and i saw Naomi running to me..

Her: Flare!!

She came to me and held my hand..

Her: Flare i could sense that.. Are you okay? You burning up.. The little girl got closer too..

Her: Flare? I am Flare.. I am Flare Versini.. What is going on?? How could she be me??

Those were the only questions that ran in my mind before i passed out.

PART 44

CLIVE

I had gone to get the house Doctor...We were now gathered in Flare's room. It was Me, my mother, Maxima, Naomi, and Zoe.. I was holding Zoe because she was shaken by the fact that Flare doesn't wanna wake up..

The doctor was examining her, he had been doing that for the past 10min leaving us curious to know what was happening with Flare..

He put his stethoscope around his neck and Exhaled.. He then looked at us. Him: Unfortunately she has slipped into a coma..

Coma?? I was hearing what the doctor was saying but i was failing to comprehend, Flare cannot slip into a coma just like that..

Doctor: Sire i need to know what happened, so that i can draw up a conclusive diagnosis...

The had gone quiet now, they were looking at me and waiting on me to give them explanation..

Me: We... She.. She just started feeling strange, and then started vomiting seemed as if like she was coming up with a fever..

The doctor extended his hand and put it on Flare's forehead.. Him: She is burning up really bad..

His hand went down to Flare's neck, and before i knew it his hand was running all over Flare's body which made me very uncomfortable..

Me: Is that Necessary? My mother looked at me..

Mom: He is just doing his job Clive.. Me: By molesting my soon to be wife? He got his hand off her..

Him: I apologise your highness if that seemed inappropriate.. I looked at him, i was still holding Zoe..

Me: So where too from here?

Him: i think that she should be taken to the hospital,so that we can run more tests. She could have a deadly parasite or Bacteria in her bloodstream..

After the doctor had said that, Naomi looked at me..

Her: Sire forgive me if this is gonna sound disrespectful, but i am Flare's only surviving relative, i am her Guardian and i need to know what really happened because my job is to protect her and Zoe, since their mother is no more i am all that they have..

I looked at her too, i didn't have a clear explanation on what happened because i also don't know what happened. I need an explanation myself.

Me: i had already told the whole room what happened.

I looked at the Doctor Naomi. After addressing Naomi with that, my focus went back to the Doctor...

Me: You can call the Ambulance so they can come and take her to the hospital.. Naomi exclaimed..

Naomi: No!

We all shifted our attention from Flare to her..

Her: Forgive me Sire but at this point I do not think that western medicine can help Flare..

Me: Why do you say that?

She started pacing up and down..

Her: As i was growing up, i saw my father coming across such cases and western medicine never helped the patients....

I was still standing there, hoping that she will probably come up with a better explanation on what is happening with Flare, because i was serious worried.. Her: i think this needs a spiritual healer..

Me: You think that This has to do with Sorcery? She looked at me and bowed..

Her: Yes Sire, i believe so..

FLARE

I opened my eyes and looked around i was in a place that i wasn't very familiar with.. The place was very loud, it looked like a club and they were playing music that i was familiar with too..

I looked around again and it was empty, didn't have any customers or anyone who was sitting down and having a drink..

The music that the club was playing, I've heard it somewhere before.. I seriously didn't know what was happening to me, or where i was everything didn't make sense..

I was brought back to reality by a girl who was standing next to me, she snapped her fingers right next to my ear..

Her: Flare come on girl are you alright?

I looked at her and i didn't know her at all. I have never seen her anywhere before, it was my first time seeing her..

What really caught my attention about her, was the fact that she was dressed inappropriately.. She was wearing stockings, knee boots and a bra only. She had on big hoop earrings, and her make up was on point so was her hair..

She looked at me..

Her: Snap out of it, what's wrong with you?

I decided to look at myself too and i wasn't dressed in a proper manner. I was also wearing stockings, knee boots and a bra..

After looking at myself, i lifted my head up and looked at her.. Me: What is going on? Do you know me? Where am i?

She looked at me as if like i was crazy, she then started laughing.. Her: Nice one Flare!!

She then turned around and went up to a chair...

I looked around again, and i was standing on the stage of the club, there was a stripping pole in the middle.. I suddenly felt sick to my stomach, i put my hand on my mouth. Is this what i think is? Am i who i think i am??!..

The girl snapped her fingers, and a certain song was played..

She lifted up her stockings and maintained a steady position. She then turned around and looked at us, i was standing behind her with 4 other girls..

Her: Okay ladies from the top. 1..2..3..and let's go..

They all started dancing except for me. I was standing there all dumbfounded, i seriously didn't know what was happening or where i was...

Me: What is happening to me??..

They continued dancing while i stood there like a robot. She then turned around and looked at me, then she stopped dancing..

Her: Flare what are you doing? Do you want Clive to kill you??

It was strange, she mentioned Clive. Does she know him?

Does she have a clear explanation on what is happening?

I looked at her with begging eyes.. Me: You know Clive?

Her: Ofcourse i know Clive, everybody knows Clive Flare!! She started taking a few steps towards me..

Her: Are you alright Flare? Me: No, i don't think so..

She looked at one of the girls signalling that one must get me a chair and another one should get me a drink..

The girls went on to do as they were told.. She put her hand on my shoulder.. Her: What is wrong sweetheart? Do you feel sick?

Me: i don't know...i mean all i remember is that i was in bed with Clive we were making love and..

Her: Whoa!... Whoa... Hold up a bit.. You were what?

I looked at her all puzzled, did i say something that i wasn't supposed to say... Her: Flare Clive is married. Now i

understand that he has alot of flings on the side but you should never take him fucking you seriously..

I was very confused i wish someone could come and explain to me what is complaining..

Me: Did you just say Clive is married?

The girls came back with a chair and a glass of water.. I sat down on the chair and took a sip of that water..

Me: Did you just say Clive is married? Her: Yes, and his wife is pregnant Me: Who is he married too?

Her: Are you serious Flare?

I gave her a serious look, she noticed that i wasn't playing..

Her: His married to Sophia..

After hearing that comment i almost dropped the glass..

Me: No you have to be joking.. Clive and Sophia couldn't be possibly married,they are siblings.. Twins to be exact..

Her: What? Flare where do you get all of this?

Me: Look Clive is a prince and Sophia is a Princess!

Her: Flare Clive is no Prince.. Clive is a pimp, and he owns this Clive. All of us here, we work for him!. Sophia is his wife..

Me: if his wife is Sophia, then who is his sister?

Her: Clive doesn't have a sister, he has a brother by the name of Charlie.. My jaw dropped, what is happening??

PART 45

What was happening to me didn't make any sense. All i remember was being in the bedroom with Clive and making love. Then i saw a little girl, then Everything just went blurry after that..

The lady looked at me. Her: Are you okay now?

I was still sitting down and holding that glass of water,i glanced down. Me: Not really..

She put her hand on my thigh and squeezed it a bit.. Her: You'll be fine sweetheart..

She then stood up and looked at the girls. Her: We'll take it from the top...

She then looked at me.

Her: Flare you can sit down for a moment and just try to get yourself together, but we gonna need you to get off the stage..

I didn't say anything. I just nodded my head and stood up, then i Walked off the stage, I went to sit down at the table and watched them do their thing...

The Dj turned on the music, and they started dancing. I am not gonna lie, they were pretty good dancers

As i was sitting there and watching those beautiful ladies dancing sexy busy going up and down that stripping pole, I heard a familiar voice screaming my name from the entrance..

I turned my head around and looked at the entrance. I saw Clive walking In, i won't lie my heart melted, i was very relieved and happy to see him maybe he can tell me what's going on...

I stood up and waited for him to come to me, and he did....

I looked at him, something about him didn't make any sense.

He was my Clive, but not my Clive Clive.. The way he was wearing, the way he conducted himself was not Prince Clive...

He was bald, he had on diamond stud earrings. He was wearing a Jean, sneakers and a tshirt. He does wear such but something was off

The music suddenly stopped, the ladies stopped dancing too. I looked at them and they looked terrified, very terrified of him...

Clive looked at me, i could see that he was very very very angry...

What happened next i wasn't prepared for it, he punched me hard across the face and i fell on the table..

One of the girls started freaking out really bad.. Her: Clive please!!!..

Clive: Shut the fuck up Nicole!!

I was trying to get myself up from that table. I was bleeding from my mouth, i had hurt myself when I fell too..

Him: What are you playing at Flare??

I looked at him, i wish i knew what he was talking about. I wish i knew why he was soo upset. No matter how angry Clive can be, but he has never raised his hand on me...

Him: Where did you get the audacity to call my wife and say all those things you said to her huh?

I got myself up from that table and stood infront of him again, swallowing my own blood. He has hurt my mouth pretty bad i thought my teeth were gonna fall out.. Him: Yes we fuck a few times, but that don't mean i love you!!!

He looked at me from head to toe all disgusted..

Him: You a whore, that is all you going to be! Now call my wire again and I'm going to kill you!!

I looked at him, his eyes vowed to what he was saying he wasn't joking he meant that...

NAOMI

I didn't know what was happening to Flare, i tried my level best to make sense of what was happening but nothing hit

my mind..

If only i could know what happened in the bedroom before she slipped in a Coma, then i could probably come up with an explanation but Sire wasn't talking and i didn't wanna push him further because that would make him suspicious...

Although i had asked Sire not to take Flare to the hospital, it was like my request had fallen into deaf ears because after a few minutes the paramedics came to transport Flare to the hospital...

From the report that was brought back by the Queen, Flare wasn't doing well she was in ICU...

I had soo many questions about what was happening to her and i had Zero answers...

At that instant i decided to go and seek help from the only spiritual healer that i know could possibly help me, Father Uther..

Father Uther is an elder of the Guardians, we seek help and advice from him when things are beyond our control and this matter was beyond my control..

Father Uther he owns the Callanine Bible Church, and everyone in Callanine respects and adores him..

I got to the church and he was sitting at the front, I wasn't sure of he was praying or just sitting...

I slowly made my way to him at a slow pace trying not to disturb him.... I got to the front benches and i sat next to him, he had his eyes closed.. Him: Naomi

I looked at him, he still at his eyes closed.. Me: Father, forgive me for disturbing you..

Him: Have no fear child, i have been waiting for you.. That gave me a sense of relief..

Him: Is it about one of your charges Flare?

Me: Yes Father, something has happened to her and i don't

know what it is..

He opened his eyes and touched his necklace around his neck that had a cross... Him: Do you believe that a soul has lived many lives

Me: ive had about being reborn..

He settled himself down before continuing..

Him: it is believed that we have lived many lives before without even having knowledge or remembering anything about our previous lives..

Me: Why is that father?

Him: Because the spirit carries no memory. When a person dies, their soul doesn't die instead it is carried to another body to continue living.. Haven't you asked yourself why a person has to die when another person is born?

Me: i have asked myself that..

Her: That is because that new body we'll need a new soul..

Me: Is that what's happening to Flare?

Him: Flare is stuck in the past, she is living one of her previous lives. Me: How is that possible?

Him: it happens mostly to witches, that at a certain point they have to date back and remember their previous lives, how they lived before and how their previous lives compare to their current lives.

Now things started making sense..

Him: Sometimes you do get flashbacks of your previous which they call it "deja vu" He turned to his side and looked at me..

Him: Sometimes you can feel that you have been in this place before at this exact time. They call that Deja vu and we call it a flash black of your previous life..

Me: Everything is starting to make sense..

Him: All the people that you know now in this current life have been in your previous life too

Me: I'm not following father.

Him: You know me as an elder of the Guardians, but you would find that in your previous life you and me we were married..

Me: So all the people i know now, I've known them too in my previous lives but in another form?

Him: Exactly my point...

Me: Does it happen to everyone?

Him: it happens to witches only we call it "The curse of an ancient spirit" Me: Why is it called that?

Him: Because not all witches come back, some get trapped in their previous lives forever..

Me: So there's a possibility that Flare might never come back from this? Him: Yes, and quite frankly she's running out of time..

Me: How do we get her soul back? How do we get her back because she doesn't belong in that life?

He looked down... Me: Father?

Him: This is out of our hands, only Clive can save him Me: Why Clive?

Him: Because he is the closest to Flare's heart.. Me: How does he do that?

Him: He needs to get a certain plant called "The devil's claw" from the Garden of evil..

Me: Garden of Evil?

Him: Its not in our world, it is in the world of witches.. The devil's claw is guarded by powerful magic from powerful witches..

Me: Let me get this straight, Clive will have to go against what he doesn't believe in to Save Flare?

Him: Yes my child. Clive will have to stand face to face with Sorcerery.. This is a test of True love...

I understand what Father Uther was saying, but Clive will never do it. Clive hates Sorcery with all his heart..

PART 46

CLIVE

2 weeks had passed now. Flare was not getting any better, her state of health didn't change she was still in a coma and Doctors have lost all hope on her. They had ran several tests and all the tests came back negative, there was no bacteria or parasite in her system everything was fine with her physically, we were all just puzzled at what might have made her slip into a Coma.....

I was in her ward, holding her hand and looking at her. She was laying there peacefully with all those machines helping her to breathe, that EKG showed her heart beating in a rhythm...I was trying to be strong for her but it was killing me slowly inside seeing her in that state, it was killing me not hearing her voice, it killed me not seeing her beautiful warm smile and it killed me more not hearing her voice. I didn't know what to do, Doctors were encouraging me and Naomi to switch off the machines and put her out of this misery, but I couldn't do that and I won't do it..

I am not going to kill Flare, yes a small part of me had lost all hope but a big part of me still believed that she can pull through this and come back. It was not my first time being faced with this situation, I have been here before watching my sister dying slowly the same way that I'm watching the one I love dying slowly...

I felt tears filling my eyes as I looked at her. It must not be easy being in this situation, I can imagine the pain she is in right now and not knowing how to help her killed me mostly. I felt so helpless in so many ways, I just want to take away her pain for one second and make it mine. I want to give her a breather and be the one laying on that bed, while she goes outside once more to experience the life she once lived... As I was busy holding her hand and looking at her, I heard someone clearing their throat.. I shifted my focus on Flare

and looked at whoever was in the room seeking my attention, and it was the Doctor..

Her: How are you Sire?

I shrugged my shoulders..

She opened the file that she was holding, and silently read through it before closing it again and looking at me.....

Her: Unfortunately Sire i have some bad news...

I wiped the tears that were streaming down my cheeks...

Her: One of Flare's Kidneys might give up on her.

Me: What?

Her: Sire she is very dehydrated, and we are scared to give her a hydration solution because of the baby. We are limited on what we should give her because we do not want to harm the baby...

As much as Flare was not making it, so was my baby. The doctor did a scan a few days ago and my baby's heartbeat was very faint, she/he was slowly dying inside of Flare.....

I truly wasn't prepared for what the doctor was telling me right now, i started hitting myself on the forehead with Flare's hand...

Me: i can't lose her, there has to be another way.. She looked at me as if like she was feeling my pain....

Me: There has to be another way doc, i love her way too much to let her go..

Was i being selfish? Should i just switch off the machines and put Flare out of this misery?!!

I looked at her with so many questions running in my mind, i love Flare but am i being selfish by wanting to keep her alive with all those machines? I was really caught up in a situation that i never thought i would come face to face with.....

I continued looking at her, but this time around i looked at her with soo much anger inside of me that i ended up snapping.....

Me: Fuck Flare just wake up!!! Can't you see that what you doing is killing me? Not only are you killing me but you also killing our baby!! Stop being selfish and just wake the fuck up!! (shouting)..

I didn't realise that I was now squeezing her tiny hand very tight that i almost broke her bones.....

The Doctor looked at me, i could see that she truly wanted to help bring Flare back but just like me she was also helpless now....

Doc: Sire i think that i might have a solution for all of this.. I looked at her..

Her: I.. Sire we have ran every possible test and everything came back negative, proving that the is nothing wrong with Flare physically..

Me: i know all of that, can you get to the point?

She fixed her coat and put down the file she was holding on that small table next to Flare's bed...

Doctor: Sire don't you perhaps think that this is a spiritual attack? I looked at her not believing she just said that..

Me: Excuse me?

Her: My sister once experienced such and we took her to different hospitals, got her different physicians only to find that it was a spiritual attack, and we got her a spiritual healer that's how she recovered....

I sent out a mocking laugh..

Me: You a doctor, you studied for 6 years and you wanna tell me that you believe in this spiritual nonsense! You wanna tell me that my Queen is under attack? You wanna tell me that an unknown force is attacking her?

Her: i..

Me: Do you even hear what you saying? You a medical

practitioner you shouldn't be believing in such Spiritual nonsense!!

Her: Sire i..

I stood up and showed her the door.

Me: Get out!! And do keep in mind that i will be talking to your superior about this!.. She didn't argue and further with me, she started walking to the door but then stopped halfway.. She turned around and looked at me...

Her: You know Sire just because you don't believe in what you call "spiritual nonsense" doesn't mean it don't exist. You wanna help Flare but yet you the one killing her..

Me: Get out and stay out!!! (shouting) She walked out of the door...

I sat down not believing what that woman has said to me i mean She should know better, she is a doctor!..

I went on to holding Flare's hand again then closed my eyes, trying to sink myself deeper into the memories that we have created than to watch her dying slowly.. As i was trying to ease my pain with those happy memories i suddenly heard the EKG machine beeping.. I opened my eyes and looked at it, it had a flat line across and Flare started Shaking drastically..

I immediately stood up and rushed to get help..

2 doctors went running into the ward and 2 nurses. I was standing by the door trying to make sense of what was happening..

Doctor 1: i think she is having a seizure we need to stabilise her..

I was standing there with my hands on my head and tears in my eyes, i wasn't ready to loose her. One of the doctor's looked at me.

Him: Please get Sire out..

One of the nurses came to me..

Her: Sire can you please step out and wait at the reception..

Me: No I'm not gonna leave her

Nurse: Sire Please, the doctors are doing their best..

Me: No! I am not going out! I am the king and you cannot disrespect me.. Nurse: i understand Sire but..

I heard a voice behind me saying "it's Okay, I'll take it from here"

I turned around and it was my mother. Her: Come son, let's go and sit down..

I didn't pull up a fight, i went out with her and the nurse closed the door behind me. I went to sit on a chair that was opposite her ward and i couldn't stop the tears, i found myself sobbing bitterly...

My mother came to me and put her hands on my shoulders, i could sense that she was crying too because she was busy sniffing..

Me: i cannot lose her mother, i love her.. Her: i know my baby, i know..

I wish she did know, i wish she knew the pain that Flare was causing me..

FLARE

It was now around 19:00 and i was on my way "home". I was in the cab with Nicole, the girl from the club she was accompanying me home since i didn't know where home was...

She turned and looked at me.

Her: Flare i seriously don't know what's going on with you. How can you forget your way home?

Me: Nicole i don't know what's happening, but what i know is that i don't belong here. This is not my world something is just not right..

I was talking funny because my lips were busted from that punch that Clive gave me earlier..

Nicole: i.. You know Flare you just acting weird i don't even

know what to say to you anymore...

Me: What year is it? Her: Really Flare? Me: What year is it?

She looked at me and Exhaled.. Her: Its the year 3001..

Me: 3001??? No it can't be, it's supposed to be 2016..

Her: Really Flare? That is ancient, i probably wasn't born by

then.. Me: This cannot be...am i...am i in the future??

Nicole looked at me, this time around she didn't look at me

as if like I'm crazy.. Her: You really aren't from here are you?

Me: No.. I....

She looked at the cab driver.. Her: We getting off here.

The taxi pulled over and we climbed off, then started walking on foot..

Me: i have heard of people going to the past, but i have never heard of people being in the future..

I looked at Nicole..

Me: You do believe me don't you? Her: Ohh yes i believe you now

Me: So my future self is a prostitute or stripper? Her: Looks that way..

I stopped walking and i looked at her. Me: Do i have a mother?

Her: Ofcourse you do Me: She's still alive? Her: Yes she is..

Me: Is it Rose Versini?

Her: No Flare.. Rose Versini is your great grandmother who was a prostitute..

Me: No in my world, Rose Versini is my mother. She was put to death because she.. She looked at me..

Me: If rose Versini is not my mother then who is my mother?

Her: Come, let's go to your house and you'll see who your mother is..

She held my hand and we walked home.. I was very nervous who is my mother in my future self??

PART 47

FLARE

Nicole and i got home. My home was a very beautiful small house that can accommodate at least 4 people..As we made our way inside i looked around and it did feel right, it did feel like home. i could even smell freshly baked chocolate muffins.....

Me: That smell is soo familiar Nicole: Mom loves baking..

Me: Mom?

She looked at me..

Her: We are sisters Flare.. That came across as a shock..

Me: Why where you quiet about all of this?

Her: i was hoping that you would remember me.. She took off her jacket and hung it behind the door..

Her: i now believe you when you say you are not from this world, because my sister Flare would never forget me...

Me: My future self has a sister named Nicole wow.. Her:

Your past self doesn't have a sister?

Me: i do. Her name is Zoe, she is an Angel.. Her: Zoe....

She looked down after saying that. Me: What's wrong?

Her: Your future self does have Zoe, but she's not your sister.. She walked up to the table and got herself a muffin..i

followed her. Me: What is Zoe to me in this lifetime?..

Her: She's your daughter..

She then put a piece of muffin in her mouth....

Me: She's my what??.. Her: Better believe it..

As we were standing there, the door opened. Charlie and Zoe walked In, Zoe ran up to me and hugged my leg..

Her: You are home mommy..

I glanced down at her and she looked exactly like my little sister Zoe.. I was starting to get overwhelmed by everything that was happening.. Nicole: Zoe come and have a muffin with Aunty Nini..

Zoe let go of my leg and then she went to Nicole. I stood there and looked at Charlie, he also looked exactly like my Charlie, my Charlie from my lifetime...

I couldn't contain myself, I ran up to him and hugged him tight.. Him: Whoa! That is a strange turn of events..

I let go of him and then looked at him. I wish he could remember me, i wish he could remember our friendship..

Him: Are you alright?

I nodded my head yes..

Me: i am fine.. I.. I just miss you Charlie..

He looked at me puzzled, as if like i said something out of the ordinary.. Me: aren't we friends? Don't we tell each other that all the time?

Him: i guess so..

He looked at his wrist watch.. Him: i have to go..

He then looked at Zoe and Nicole.. Him: Later girls..

They bid him farewell He then looked at me.... Him: Did he do this to you?

He said that while looking at my Lips.. Him: i swear if he touches you again!!..

I forced a smile through those painful busted lips. Even The future Charlie still cares, i guess that's one thing you cannot take away from him...

Him: Its not something to smile about, he could've killed you!. I held his hand..

Me: at least he didn't kill me.. He got his hand off my grip..

Him: i have to go.

He didn't even look at me, he just walked out. I turned around and looked at Nicole hoping to get an explanation on what just happened..she raised up her hands In a form of surrendering..

Her: do not even ask.. Me: Let me not ask then...

I went to sit on the couch. I didn't like the clothes that i was wearing, they were just not my style they made me feel

loose, made me feel like a hooker.....

The door opened again, and i thought it was Charlie but it wasn't.. I didn't expect to see the person who walked in through that door..

I heard Zoe shouting.. Zoe: Nanny!!!!

The person who walked in through that door was Mishaka Versini. I looked at her for a while, she was very beautiful i have never thought that Mishaka would be this beautiful because I've only seen her as an apparition or her taking over on someone's body. I never thought that her true self would be this beautiful.. She took off her coat and hung it behind the door too... Her: Hello my bamboo

Zoe ran up to her, she then picked her up.. Mishaka then looked at me and Nicole.. Her: And how are my daughters doing? Nicole: We are fine..

Mishaka looked at me again..

Her: sweetheart what happened to your lips? Nicole: Clive happened again!!

Mishaka: We need to get him a restraining order Flare, he cannot keep on doing this to you!!

I looked at her with tears falling down my cheeks. She did look like a caring mother, she was something that i have always been seeking all my life. A mother's love.

CLIVE

I was still at the hospital, Flare was now stable but for how long? She might have a kidney failure, and now she also had a cardiac arrest my sweet Darling Queen? When will she get peace??..

My mother came to me with a cup of coffee, i looked at her.. Her: You need it...

I took it and then she sat down next to me..

Her: You know Clive, today you showed me how much Flare means to you..

I didn't say anything instead i took a sip of that coffee and it was a strong cup of coffee, just what i needed....

She looked at me..

Her: You do love her don't you? I also looked at her..

Me: More than life itself..

That was the honest truth, i love Flare more than life itself....

Mom: i wish there was something i could do to help..

I looked at her..

Me: Do you really mean that?

Her: i can see how much she means to you, and i wanna help...

I wish i could say that she was lying, but i could see it in her eyes that she was being Truthful..

Me: Some Doctor.. She said that this might be a spiritual attack. Mom: That's deep.

Me: She said she knows some spiritual healer who can help us.. Mom: and what do you say?

Me: i don't know..

Her: Doctors did mention that there's nothing wrong with Flare physically.. Me: You also think that this is a spiritual attack

She shrugged her shoulders..

Her: i think we should consider all possibilities to help Flare.. Maybe my mother is right, maybe i should stop being selfish and just consider other options...

PART 48

CLIVE

I had went to the Doctor to ask her if she could get us a spiritual healer, and she had gotten us a Girl called Irisis who was 18 years of age and had dedicated her life into being a Nun.....

Iris was residing at the Callanine Bible temple where she was hiding from the world because of fear..

Apparently Iris can tell you your future or the events that can happen to you just by touching or holding your hand. She wasn't the only one who was hiding from the face of the Callanine, i had also discovered that just like her there were other girls with different gifts from that of Iris and they were all residing at the temple..

I was very heartbroken to learn that my family is the reason why this little girls were isolated from the world. They were scared that if it was ever revealed that they have gifts then they can be put to death because that would be sorcery. Anything where magic is concerned or communicating with people not of this world is considered evil/sorcery. The Callanine Bible temple was the only place that kept this girls safe from being put to death. They took them and gave them a home, and enforced religious beliefs on them.....

I had gone to that temple with Naomi it was just the 2 of us and we were sitting at the visiting room waiting to meet Iris....

We had requested to see her 10min ago, and she still didn't show up, i was starting to become very impatient....

Me: What's taking her so long?

Naomi: You must keep in mind that you are her biggest fear, i mean your presence is going to frighten her...

Me: i am not here to kill her, i mean i don't need a reason too or do i? Naomi: No you don't, but she doesn't know that..

I had no intentions of having Iris killed or hurting her, i do not associate her with Sorcery i just see her as having a rare gift of being shown the future..

As i was sitting there, starring at my wrist watch, i heard the door opening. A little girl dressed like a nun walked in, she was accompanied by the Head Nun if that's how i can call her or her superior rather.....

She stood at the door, she looked very frightened by my presence as Naomi had put it.. I stood up and looked at her...I felt Naomi touching my arm after a while....

Her: We don't wanna scare her Sire, she is the only hope we have in getting Flare back..

I went and sat down again.. Her superior started talking to her, unfortunately i couldn't hear what was being said but i think she was trying to make her feel comfortable....

After that Pep talk, they made their way to us and they sat opposite us.. Superior: Sire and Miss Naomi, please meet Iris..

This Iris was my last hope, she was the only hope to bring Flare back and i didn't wanna give her any negative impression... I stretched my hand out to her.

Me: Its a great honour to meet you Iris..

She didn't say anything nor shook my hand, she just looked down.. I didn't know if she was shy or scared..

Superior: Iris, Sire is here because him and his family they need your help.. She still didn't say anything, she just continued looking down...

I looked at Naomi, and she signalled to me that i should start talking..

Me: Iris my... My Queen is very sick. We have tried everything we could possibly think of to help her but nothing has worked so far.. Dr Spears is the one who sent us here to talk to you because she thinks that you can help me, i mean she thinks that you can help my fiance... She didn't say

anything for a while, then after i saw her leaning over and Whispering something to her superior. Naomi and i looked at each other, and I'm not gonna lie i was a bit nervous about the whole situation. I was more nervous about her response...

Her superior cleared her Throat.. Superior: Forgive us Sire but..

She looked at Iris, then after she looked at me.. Her: Iris doesn't think that she can help you..

That is what i was afraid of hearing..

Me: What do you mean that she cannot help me?

Superior: She says that for something to work you need to believe in it.. Me: How does that relate to me? I am not the one sick..

She leaned over and Whispered to her superior again..

Superior: Sire Iris says that, you are a big part of what's happening and for the Queen to be healed you need to believe in what you don't believe in..

I don't wanna lie, that was some Bullshit. What i believe in, and what i don't believe in shouldn't affect Flare's healing...

After that insufficient useless information she had just given us, she stood up and requested to be taken back to her room..

The superior stood up too and was about to walk her back to her room... Superior: i am very sorry Sire i really thought that Iris was gonna help.....

They then started walking away..I swear at that instant i couldn't hold myself, I didn't wanna accept what she was telling me i couldn't let her go without her agreeing to help us.. I stood up and made my way to them..

Me: Hey!! (shouting)

I heard Naomi talking behind me, i think she was following me.. Naomi: Sire contain yourself this is a Peaceful place.

I held her arm and looked straight into her eyes.. Me:

Please.. Can you please help me..

I was desperate, i truly needed her help.. She looked at me for a while, then she looked at my hand that was holding her arm very tight..

She didn't say anything, she just looked at her superior who also looked at her and then smiled at her...

Superior: i will pack a few things for you.. I looked at her superior dumbfounded... Me: Does that mean she?

The superior looked at me..

Her: Yes she is going to help you..

You don't know the excitement and relief that came over my heart, i strongly believe that this Iris person will help us...

I was very happy that i even hugged her.... Me: Thank you very much Iris..

They went and packed a few things for her. Before we embarked on our journey, We were made to swear under oath that whatever happens i will spare Iris'life...

I did everything that was required of me, and i swore to protect her too it was just alot that i had to do it even felt as if like i was pledging my life or something

When we were done with the whole thing we, drove away from that place with her friends and her superiors waving goodbye at us as the car made its way out. Iris was sitting at the back with Naomi, she was looking back at her friends and the only place that she probably calls home...

I was looking at her through the mirror as i was driving, and she was very quiet i wondered if she ever talks to anyone, or maybe she talks to her superiors only....

Before we made our way to the hospital, i decided to stop at some restaurant so we could get something to eat.....

Naomi and i we were caught in a situation that we didn't understand at all, a situation that we were not familiar with....

We were sitting there at that restaurant looking at the

menus and Iris was just sitting there looking around at every person in the restaurant it was almost as if like she wasn't used to such places..

Me: So Iris what would you like to eat? There's burgers, pizza I'm sure if you eat that at the temple..

She didn't say anything.. Naomi and i looked at each other every now and then, not knowing what to say Not only were we faced with a situation we weren't familiar with, but people at the restaurant were looking at us too. I mean it was pretty odd hanging around with a girl who was wearing like a nun.....

Things were too awkward for us that we decided to get takeaways and then we made our way to the hospital.....

We finally arrived at the hospital, i couldn't wait for Iris to help Flare. Deep down i trusted and Believed in Iris to help Flare.....

We went inside and made our way to Flare's ward.

Immediately when we got to the door of Flare's ward, Iris took off her shoes and left them at the door then she went inside. Naomi and i attempted to go inside but she looked at our feet, we had no choice but to take off our shoes too.....

We made our way in and i closed the door behind us didn't want any disturbances.. She went over to Flare and held her hand then closed her eyes..

It was very silent in the ward, the only thing i could hear were the machines beeping... I looked at Iris wishing that i could hear or see what she was seeing..

What happened next, it made my jaw drop, i totally wasn't ready or prepared for it...

Flare snapped out of the coma, she arose from whatever was holding her, it was almost as if like she was woken up from a bad dream, or she was drowning in deep waters and Was fighting for survival...

She raised her head from her pillows in the most quickest

way ever and started screaming....

Flare: IT'S NOT MY JOURNEY!!!

Iris was still holding her hand and closing her eyes.. Flare: IT IS NOT MY JOURNEY!!!

Flare's eyes were half opened, her breathing was also shallow.. i was about to make my way to to her, when Naomi held me back..

Flare: IT IS NOT MY JOURNEY!!!

nothing Flare said made sense at all her heartbeat on the EKG was being read abnormally it kept on beeping and beeping.. Iris let go of her hand then Flare fell back on her pillow, she didn't move, she didn't flinch it was more as if like she had slipped back into a coma again, we were back to square one....

I looked at Iris and she looked a bit shaken up, whatever she saw really shook her up too.. Iris: She is not the one, the journey is not for her!

PART 49

NAOMI

We drove back home after that whole incident at the hospital with a lot of questions than answers. Clive was upset that Iris wasn't talking or explaining to us what had happened at the hospital. I feel like Iris had a lot to say, and she just needed someone who would understand the whole situation and that is when I made it a point that I probably should talk to her when we get home.. I was very worried about Flare. Time is running and she is not waking up there is no hope that she would even snap out of this

We got home, and walked in. Clive was holding Iris' bag while I held her hand. I was trying to make her feel very comfortable considering that this is a new environment for her...

We found Zoe and Princess Maxima at the kitchen, looked like they were preparing Macaroni and Cheese...

When Zoe saw Clive, she jumped down from the table and ran to Clive. Clive put the bag down and picked her up....

Clive: How are you? Her: I'm fine

Clive: What are you doing?

Zoe: Making Macaroni and Cheese Clive: Smells nice..

Zoe: it is nice..

Iris had a tight grip on my hand now, I turned on my side to look at her, and she was looking at Zoe. I let my hand escape from her tight grip then I put it on her shoulder trying to put her at ease...

Me: Are you alright Iris?

She didn't say much, she just continued looking at Zoe.. Iris:
The Inferno!

Her statement caught everyone's attention in the room. All eyes shifted and looked at Iris..

Her: The Inferno!!

Clive looked at me, i shrugged my shoulders i really didn't know what was going on with Iris..

Me: i think i should take her to the bedroom, maybe she's tired let her rest a little... I held her hand again and we walked up to the bedroom, in hopes that me and her will be able to talk and maybe she can tell me what's going on..

FLARE

It was a new day, and i was preparing Zoe for school. I am slowly but surely trying to adjust to this new life of mine that im put in. Although everything here seemed peaceful but i really miss my old life, i miss Clive, i miss my sister Zoe, i miss my friend Charlie i just Miss everything about my old life.....

When i was done dressing up Zoe, i put her down from the bed. Me: There you go..

She stood there looking pretty as always. Me: Who is taking you to school again? Her: Uncle Charlie..

I sat down on the bed.

Me: You and Uncle Charlie are pretty close aren't you?

She nodded her head. So my future self has a daughter who is Zoe, now the question left to be answered is who is Zoe's father?

The door opened as my mind was consumed by many thoughts, and Mishaka walked in she was well dressed up looking like she's going to work or something.. She looked at Zoe.

Her: Look at you my pumpkin pie, you look adorable.. Zoe: Thank you..

She then looked at me..

Her: How are you feeling this morning darling? I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I'm hanging in there.. I looked at her..

Me: Can i ask you something? Her: What's bothering you?

Me: Does Zoe's father ever come to visit Zoe?

Her: Who? Clive? Pssh! He meant it when he said he doesn't want anything to do with her..

So Clive is Zoe's father. I looked at Zoe and i could clearly tell that this conversation was upsetting her..how did Clive get to be this ruthless?? I mean the Clive from my timeline could even lay down his own life for Zoe that is how much he loves Zoe..... Mishaka looked at Zoe..

Mishaka: Let's go Princess I'm sure uncle Charlie is waiting for us..... Zoe took her bag then came to give me a hug and they left..

I sat down in that room thinking to myself that I need to go home, i need to get back to my loved ones....

#NAOMI

I was in the bedroom with Iris it was just the two of us. I wanted to lock the door but then i figured that if i do then it will raise suspicions.. She walked around the room while looking at everything, she tried to familiarise herself with everything..

I slowly walked up to her...

Her: I was hoping that it would be the two of us eventually...

Me: So you can talk?

She turned around and looked at me.. Her: Ofcause i can talk..

Her voice was sweet and very calm.. She looked at me for a while.... Her: Your mind tells me that you have alot of questions to ask...

Me: That is correct.. I looked at her..

Me: first question being, what is happening to Flare?

She walked up to my chest drawer and got the book of spells. Since Flare went to the hospital i have been keeping the book safe for her. The house maids clean her room

frequently so i didn't want them to find such because it will cause problems for her.. She put it ontop of the table and started paging through the book, i didn't even know how she knew that the book was there...

Her: Have you ever heard of the Inferno tribe? I went closer to her..

Me: the Inferno tribe? She nodded her head..

Her: they are the keepers of the devil's claw plant in the garden of Evil... Me: What does that have to do with Flare?

Her: they are the ones who have trapped Flare's soul into the future.. Me: i thought that she was stuck in the past..

Her: she is in the future..

Me: What does the Inferno tribe want with Flare?

She kept quiet for a while, then started talking again...

Her: They are lost, they have no ruler. They want their Queen.. Me: You saying Flare is their Queen?

She shook her head no..

Her: This is not Flare's journey. Flare just happened to be caught up in the middle of someone's journey..

Me: Whose journey is it?

Her: You live with the Inferno Queen but you don't even know it.. Me: I'm not following. You saying that the inferno

Queen is here? She nodded..

Her: She doesn't belong here, her power is too destructive for this world. She can destroy the whole of Callanine..

I looked at her while she continued talking...

Iris: if she stays here, the future of Callanine will be compromised, but if she goes home she's gonna bring forth a new world order. Because of her Sire will let witches and people like me who have different gifts and powers to be accepted and live free here in Callanine..

Me: And what about Flare?

Her: Clive will have to accompany the Inferno Queen back to her people. When they get there, the Inferno tribe will give

Clive the Devil's claw plant to bring back Flare's soul from the future into the present...

Me: Who is the Inferno?

She kept quiet and looked at the door.. I saw the door opening and Zoe came in with one of the House maids...

Zoe: Aunty Naomi i have brought you some Macaroni and Cheese.. I couldn't believe it, i turned and looked at Iris..

Me: It can't be!

Iris: it is.. This is her journey..

PART 50

NAOMI

We ate dinner in silence that night, or should i say i ate in silence. I was still processing what Iris had told me.. I looked at Zoe as we were eating, how can such a young sweet pretty little girl get to possess such an extraordinary power? If what Iris said is true, then Zoe might be a powerful witch of this lifetime and she will have to be put away into a place that will best suit her, than her being a threat In our town... She was eating her food, she probably didn't know what was going on. That's the thing about kids, they are always innocent and have no knowledge about what is going on... I moved my eyes and concentrated on Iris, she was still trying to familiarise herself with the food that we were eating..

I then went on to look at Clive, he was eating his food peacefully...

Princess Maxima brought me back from analysing people when she started talking.. Maxima: i know that this might not be a good time to bring this up, but..

We all focused our attention to her..

Her: We are approaching the date of my wedding, and i would like to know where I stand with that..

Queen: We were all consumed by Flare's situation that we forgot about the wedding..

Clive: i think Flare's health should be our first priority right now. What's the use of having a wedding when one of ours is still grave sick..

Princess Maxima cleared her Throat.. Her: i understand that but..

Clive looked at her...

Clive: but nothing! If Flare is not well by then, then we cannot proceed with the wedding...

After saying that, he stood up and went.. Queen: That didn't go well...

Princess Maxima was upset, she was hurt, her cheeks had completely become red...

Her: As his wife i feel like i also should be afforded the same treatment that Flare gets...

She was now crying. The Queen held her hand..

Queen: We are not saying that you not important in this family. You are important but now we are faced with a very difficult situation, and as long as Flare is still that sick then Clive won't give in to this wedding..

Maxima: i never wanted to be second best..

Queen: i am not asking you to be.. All I'm asking you to do is to try and be understanding of this situation...

Maxima put the napkin down on the table..

Her: i am sorry if i sounded like I'm being selfish, from now on i will try to be understanding of Flare (Crying)..

She then stood up and went..

Then Queen took a deep breath and then exhaled.

Her: I never thought that i would find myself in such a difficult situation of having to choose between my daughter in laws...

Me: Her majesty doesn't have to choose between them.. She looked at me..

Me: Princess Maxima just feels a bit left out..

Queen: i don't blame her though, everyone has been more focused on Flare. Especially Clive..

She then looked at Zoe, who was dozing with a spoon inside her mouth.. Queen: i think i should go and put her in bed..

The Queen stood up, then went to pick Zoe up and Walked upstairs with her. It was now Iris and myself left at the table.....

Iris: one family that has alot of scandals.. Me: Tell me about it..

Her: Did you talk to Sire about what we talked about earlier?

Me: No i didn't

She looked at me..

Me: forgive me for delaying but i don't know how I'm supposed to approach him about this..

Iris: i understand how difficult this is, but that's how it's supposed to be done. The Inferno tribe is running out of patience, and Flare is running out of time..

Me: Isn't there another way?

Her: No that is the only way, Zoe must go to where she belongs.. Me: talking about the Inferno tribe, what kind of people are they?

Iris: i don't know much about them. I have only seen them in my visions.... Me: Do they look like us?

Her: No.. They a different species of people Me: i wish i could see them...

She looked at me while wiping her mouth..

Her: Maybe you can embark on this journey with Clive and Zoe.. Me: will that be acceptable?

Her: Yes, you have been part of this..

I was happy to hear that, i was honoured to be asked to be a part of this..

CLIVE

I woke up that morning, and made my way to the hospital. I always wanna be by Flare's side, i want my presence to remind her of the love that we once shared. Maybe that will make her snap out of the coma.....

I had lost all hope in Iris, she didn't look like she was trying to bring Flare back. She was completely useless to me at this point.....

I got to the hospital, and Flare was laying there as always. She wasn't moving, she didn't show any signs that she was coming back to life. She just laid there

peacefully...

I went to sit next to her, and held her hand. Then kissed it...

Me: Why won't you just wake up? I miss you..

Someone cleared their throat, i looked at the door and it was the Doctor.. Her: Good morning Sire

Me: Doc..

She made her way in.. Me: Any progress?

She looked at Flare, then looked at me..

Her: She had a seizure in the early hours of this morning..

Me: Not again..

Her: That is not all I looked at her..

Her: The baby seems not to be making it either... Me: So I'm losing both of them?

She nodded her head..

Her: If she makes it today, then she's really strong..

Me: i don't know what to do anymore. I have tried everything but, nothing works. Not even this spiritual healing Bullshit..

I heard a voice saying "There's one last thing, that wasn't considered"..

It was Naomi, she was with Iris and they walked in... Naomi looked at the Doctor. Doctor: i must go and attend to other patients, i will check up on Flare later..

Me: Thank you Doc

She then walked out, and i focused on Naomi... Me: What is it?

Naomi: i don't know how you gonna feel about this.. Me: Anything to bring Flare back, i will consider it.. Her: Even sorcery?

I know she didn't say what i thought she said.. Me: Excuse me what?

Her: Sorcerery, that's the only way that we gonna bring Flare back.. I was hearing that right, she said what i thought she said...

Me: Over my dead body!! Naomi: Sire..

I stood up...

Me: Sorcerery is evil!!!

Naomi: It depends on how it's practiced!! Me: Don't test me

Naomi!!

Her: Stop being selfish Sire just for once!!! Think of someone else other than yourself!!!

Tempers where furring, we were shouting at each other..

Me: Sorcerery killed my sister!! And i am not gonna let it be practiced on my Queen too!!!

She laughed a little and looked down...

Her: The only person who is killing Flare here is you!! I think we wasting our time busy planning a wedding, what we should be planning at this moment is a funeral. Flare and your baby's funeral!!!

I didn't realise that the doctor was in the room.. Doc: i think we should all calm down..

Me: i am the king and i will not have you talk to me like that!!.. We looked at each other, neither of us was backing down!!

PART 51

[Journey to the garden of evil part 1] # CLIVE

I had been considering what Naomi said. I understand she wants to bring Flare back, but using sorcery in the process is something that i am not prepared to do..

I lost my sister to sorcery and to think of using something that has hurt me soo bad is not what i am prepared to do.. I was sitting on that chair, looking at Flare it was almost as if like something was sucking the life out of her each and everyday.....

I wanted someone to make me understand what was going, I wanted someone to explain to me how she ended up here. There has to be a logical explanation on what was going on, because clearly i was lost, i was in the dark..

Zoe came in, she was holding a can of coke.. Me: Hey you.. She came to me, and i sat her on my lap.. Me: Are you okay? She looked down.. Her: im sad..

Me: What's wrong?

Her: Flare doesn't wanna wake up, she been sleeping for long.. Me: i know my Princess, I'm sad too..

Her: is she gonna die like mom?

I didn't know what to say to her when she asked that.. I wish i could tell her that Flare is going to wake up but what guarantee do i have that Flare is really going to wake up??..

Me: What makes you say that?

Her: Because she has been sleeping for too long..

I wish i had the exact words, words that will better describe Flare's situation to Zoe.. Me: Flare is going to wake up okay?

Her: Okay..

My phone started beeping as we were having that heart to heart.. I took it out and checked it. It was a reminder that i had to go and meet up with the parents of that boy that Zoe burnt... I have been trying to avoid them but then they weren't backing down, so i decided to meet up with them

anyway before things get out of hand..... Me: Its time to go Princess..

Her: Okay

I put her down then stood up, and we walked out to my car. We were gonna meet up with them at some French restaurant.....

We arrived at the restaurant, and stood at the door trying to locate them. It's hard locating someone that you don't even know..

I decided to go up to the waitress and asked for help... Me: Good morning

Her: Morning Sire

She said that while bowing..

Me: i don't know I'm supposed to meet up with some people..a woman and a man. Her: Do you know who they are? Or do you know their names?

Me: That's the thing, i don't know them at all.. Her: i will ask around for you Sire..

Me: Thank you.

She went to ask around while Zoe and i stood there.... She came back after 5min..

Her: i have found them Sire, please follow me.. Me: Thank you..

She led the way, and we followed her.. She led us to a table, where some couple was sitting..

Her: Here they are Sire Me: Thank you

I sat down with Zoe on my lap.. Waitress: Can i get you anything? Me: Uhm No thank you i am fine..

I looked at them, they also said they fine.. Waitress: You will call me when you need anything Me: Ofcause, and thank you..

She walked away...I looked at this couple and they looked like decent people, they looked like people who are very understanding and people whom you can reason

with..

Me: i am pleased to meet up with both of you...

Husband: and we are pleased that you agreed to meet up with us Sire..... Wife: Even though you were summoned to court alot of times..

Okay now i take what i said back. This woman is not as decent as i thought she was..

Me: i am very sorry about that. My wife who was supposed to meet up with you is sick. She has been sick for a while now..

Husband: i am sorry to hear that Sire. We wish her a speedy recovery. Wife: We? I wish her nothing but death!

The husband was starting to get embarrassed by his wife's behaviour.. Husband: Darling..

Her: do not darling me!! My son.. I mean our son is lying in hospital and you telling me that you pity this people..you know very well how much money we spent to cover his Medical bills, we had to take a loan and then you telling me that you pity them?

It was quiet evident at that moment what she wanted, and that was money.. Husband: Darling you cannot talk to the king like that..

Her: Why? Just Because his a King it doesn't mean that they have to do as they please!!

She then looked at Zoe..

Her: And you, i hope you burn in hell for what you did to my son!!... That was it, she was going to far now....

Me: i don't think that you should be saying such to a child..

Her: a child? A child doesn't burn other children, a child doesn't hurt other children like that! That thing is not a child, she is the devil herself!!!!

Me: i see that we will not be civil about this, so can you just mention what you want so that we can move on?

Her: Well i don't even know where to start.. Me: Will a million get you off our backs? They both looked at me all shocked..

Her: Well i.. I was hoping for something like a R100 000, a million is something i didn't expect..

I got my cheque book and wrote them a cheque..

Me: i am so sorry about what happened to your son. I hope this will afford him better health care..

I didn't wait for them to say anything, i just stood up took Zoe and left..

I didn't go to the hospital anymore, i just went home i needed to relax a little... After having a talk with Zoe at the hospital i realised that I need to bring her sister back, she needs Flare. Ever since Flare slipped into a coma Zoe hasn't been herself.... When i got home, i asked Naomi to meet up with me in the chamber, and she waisted no time..

Her: You have called for me Sire? Me: Yes..

She stood before me..

Me: i have Decided to consider what you said.. Her: I'm not following

I exhaled...

Me: We can use sorcery to bring Flare back...

Her eyes widened, she seemed to be shocked by what i was saying.. Her: Are you.. Are.. Are you certain about this Sire?

Me: Yes, i am.. She smiled..

Her: Well i.. I think we should get started then.. Me: i just have a few requests..

She looked at me..

Me: We will do this at Flare's house because i don't want anyone finding out about this..

Her: Yes Ofcause Sire.. Me: I'm not done..

I walked around a bit...

Me: Naomi if this doesn't work, and Flare dies. I am going to have you and Iris killed for practicing sorcery..

That scared her a bit.. Her: i understand Sire.. She cleared her Throat.. Her: i also have a request. Me: I'm listening..

She composed herself..

Her: Zoe has to be a part of this...

Me: No Naomi Zoe is a child, she shouldn't be exposed to sorcery..

Her: Sire Zoe is a big part of this, without her this won't work. Actually without you and her this won't work..

I feel somehow about Zoe being a part of this.. She looked at me with pleading eyes..

Me: Okay, but i want both my girls safe after this. If i lose either Flare or Zoe. Naomi i am going to have you killed in the most painful way ever! And i am not bluffing...

PART 52

[Journey to the garden of evil part 2] # NAOMI

We were now at Flare's house preparing for our journey to the Garden of Evil. We had the book of spells, we had Crystals, and we also had a white Chalk. I was with Sire, Zoe, and Iris. I had also called Charlie to come with because we need all the help that we can get. Especially because we are going to a place that we do not know..

Sire had told the Queen that we are going outside of Callanine, he told her that we are going to some bushes to get a plant that will save Flare...

We had bought takeaways such as pizza, and burgers, but i got myself a chef salad because i really don't like greasy food...

Sire was reading the book of spells and the rest of us, we were eating.. Him: So, where did you guys get all of this things?

Me: We got them at some old woman's house. She used to practice sorcery before she passed on....

The lesser he knows, the better.. Him: it has interesting information..

He then looked at me,while closing the book.. Him: Are you sure that you are not a sorcerer? Me: Would i tell you if i was one?

Him: You have to be investigated, there's something i don't quite understand about you..

So Clive threatens me by busy saying his gonna kill me if this doesn't work, but what he doesn't know is that i cannot die. I have lived for many centuries. I can only die by black magic from a black Guardian. A black Guardian is one that Guards and protects Evil witches, while us white Guards we protect and guard Good witches.. The only person that i feared for was Iris. Iris is more of a seer, she doesn't have any power to protect herself and if this goes bad Clive Is really gonna kill

her..

We heard a knock at the door as we were eating... Me: i think that's him..

Clive looked at me.. Him: him, who?

I got up from the floor and went to answer the door of which Clive was following me.. Clive: Him who Naomi?

I opened the door, and there stood Charlie..

Me: i am soo glad that you are here, please come in.. I opened the door for him and he came in..

Clive: What the hell is he doing here?

I forgot how much this two people hate each other.. Me: He is here to help..

I said that while walking to the living room with them following me.. Me: We don't know the Inferno tribe, we need all the help we can get.. Iris: They are very peaceful Clive looked at her..

Clive: Wait a minute, so you do know how to talk.. Iris: Ofcause Sire i know how to talk?

As soon as Zoe saw Charlie, she ran up to him.. Zoe: Uncle Charlie !!

Charlie picked her up.

Charlie: Hello beautiful.. Did you miss me? Zoe: Yes i did Charlie Started tickling her, Zoe was laughing hysterically and Clive was not enjoying the moment..

Charlie: Naomi..I looked at him..

Him: Why didn't you tell me about Flare?

Clive was now standing there with the book of spells, we had cleared everything out from the living room..

Clive: Because Flare is none of your business! Charlie: She is my business...

Clive: Yeah not anymore!!

Me: Can we concentrate on this one common goal which is finding the cure for Flare?

They both calmed down.. Charlie: So what's the plan?

Iris: You guys will have to go to a place known as the Garden of Evil, to get a plant known as the devil's claw...

Charlie: Why do they call it the devil's claw? Me: Because of how it is...it has hooks.. Charlie: So how do we get there?

Iris: The crystals will open a window that separates this world from the garden of Evil. You guys are gonna go through that window to get to the other side.. Charlie: Ain't that Sorcery?

Me: Yes it is. We will use a spell and crystals to open the window.. Charlie looked at Clive, he had this conniving smile..

Charlie: Really? Clive associates himself with Sorcery now?

Clive: i don't associate with you, so keep my name out of your mouth.. I really don't know how we gonna get through this with this two..... Clive: What else do we know about this Inferno tribe?

Iris: They very peaceful, warm hearted and friendly.. Clive: if so why didn't they say garden of peace? Charlie: Such a stupid question..

Clive: Pardon me?

Me: Moving on... Iris do we have to carry weapons?

Iris: i just said that they are peaceful people, what you need weapons for? Clive: Ookay miss Iris can we get started?

She went and drew a circle on the wall. She then put 2 crystals closer to the wall..... Iris: is everyone ready?

We all looked at each other.. Me: i think so..

She went and took the book of spells from Clive and found the relevant spell.. Iris: "In space and time, we come forth. Open now the window that leads to the Garden of Evil"

I saw the circle opening into this deep and dark tunnel.....

Clive: i thought you said it was going to be a window.. Iris:

Well it's supposed to be a window..

Charlie: Are you sure you not leading us to hell? Iris: i read the spell from the right passage..

Me: Let's go you guys..

We all approached the tunnel, and then jumped in..

[GARDEN OF EVIL]

We found ourselves standing in some water in this beautiful place..

I have never seen something so magical. Everything was blue&pink, and everything was sparkling even the water that we stood upon was blue and sparkling.. The water wasn't deep, it reached our knees..

We all looked around just admiring this beautiful peaceful place.. Clive: Wow..

There was blue butterflies flying around, and blue birds i swear words cannot even begin to describe this place..

Charlie: i guess we made it..

This place was beyond beautiful. As we were standing there we heard Iris'voice wondering about..

Iris: Can you guys hear me? Me: Yes where are you?

Her: I'm in the living room where you left me. I can see you guys through the tunnel.. Clive: Good, then lead us to the Plant..

When we turned around to walk out of the water, we saw some blue people standing on dry ground and pointing their bow&arrows at us..

Clive: i never knew that Avatars really existed..

They were very tall, very skinny, and very blue with yellow eyes and pointy ears..

As we moved again, they shot an arrow straight in our direction but luckily it didn't hit any of us. Zoe was starting to get really scared..

Clive: i thought you said they are peaceful people.. Me: Iris said that

Charlie: Whatever you do, do not move! They started shouting at us..

Them: nepohybujte (do not move) Clive: What the fuck are they saying? Me: i have no idea

Iris: Guys..

Clive: Iris what is going on?

Iris: i am still trying to get something from the book of spells.. The water was warm, then after a few seconds it would get cold, then get warm again....

Zoe: I'm scared..

Me: We all are darling.. Iris: uhm guys

Clive: What is it?

Iris: it reads here that the inferno tribe doesn't want anyone in their land, so you guys are doomed. They are going to kill you!!

They started saying things that we didn't understand.. Them: co jsi?? (what are you)

We all looked at each other and realised that we are in deep waters (trouble)

PART 53

[Journey to the garden of evil part 3] # NAOMI

I looked at this people, and they weren't playing they were very serious about what they were doing. We found ourselves surrendering by raising up our hands, except for Charlie who was holding Zoe. Zoe was very scared she was even crying. The question that circled my mind was that "how come aren't they recognising Zoe as their Queen". I wish i knew what was going on, i wish i knew what they were saying but i was dumb struck...

Them: co jsi ty, kde máte pocházejí z? (who are you, where do you come from) Clive looked up..

Clive: Iris!!! (shouting) Iris: i hear you Sire..

It was almost as if like we were the only ones who heard the voice of Iris... Clive: What the fuck is going on?

Iris: i am still trying to find out. But please stay put because it seems like if you guys move you piss them off..

Their arrows were blazing, it's like they were on fire except that the fire was blue instead of red or yellow...

Me: Iris check in the book of spells Iris: I'm on that Naomi

Clive: Check faster because if this people kill us, you will be dead too!!

Iris: Really Sire? For someone in your position do you really

wanna make threats? Charlie: Iris quit playing Zoe is scared

Clive: I swear if i make it alive you are dead Iris!! Iris: Ohh

just relax Sire! I am trying my best here!!. Me: What could they possibly want?

Clive: bits me..

I looked at them, and they were serious about Killing us if we move..

We were now trapped in that situation for 3 hours. I was tired, my legs were paining especially because the temperature of the water would change constantly..

Iris was still finding us a spell to get ourselves from that

situation.. Me: i can't take this anymore

Clive: If only we knew what they wanted...

They were still standing there, pointing the Arrows at us..

Charlie: Iris haven't you found anything yet?

Iris: Not yet....

Me: Its been long now Iris.

Her: Guys i am trying so please!

As we were standing there, we saw one of the Inferno people coming to us. It was a she, and she looked a bit old. She didn't step in the water though, she just stood close to it..

She looked back at those who were pointing the Arrows at us.. Her: držte požáru (hold fire)

I saw them lowering their bows and arrows. She then turned around and looked at us..

Her: co jsi (what are you)

I don't know how we were gonna communicate with this people... Clive: I'm sorry we don't understand a word you saying..

She looked at us for a long time before speaking..

*****after 5min***** Her: What are you?

We all looked at each other puzzled by the question.. Me: We are human, we from planet earth..

Her: What in our world do you do?

Although her English was off, but at least we could understand a bit what she was saying....

Me: We are looking for a distinctive plant known as the devil's claw, that can only be found in the garden of Evil. One of our own is sick and we are trying to save her.. She tilted her head on her right side while looking at us..

Her: The plant is forbidden to leave the Garden until our Queen is brought to us.. Clive turned and looked at me..

Him: What Queen?

I shrugged my shoulders. I didn't wanna tell Clive the truth

because i cannot afford to have him throwing a temper tantrum.. Especially at a time like this..

Me: Can we at least step out of the water so we can discuss this further? We tried Moving but her people started pointing the Arrows at us.. Them: nepohybujte! (don't move) She raised her hand up and they lowered their Arrows again.. Her: You are stepping on the water of curses.. We were confused at that statement..

Her: We will not allow you to step on our grounds until cleansing is done to remove the curse..

I didn't know what she was talking about at all..we were all confused at that statement..

Clive: So we stuck in this water until we die?

Her: No! Blood must be sacrificed to calm waters.. Clive: Iris!!!

Iris: Yes Sigh?

Clive: Get us the fuck out of here! Charlie looked at him..

Charlie: We are not leaving without the plant, or at least i am not leaving without the plant to bring Flare back..

He looked at the woman.. Charlie: i will be the sacrifice.. The woman looked at Charlie. Her: Your blood is not honored.. She then looked at Clive..

Her: Your blood is honored, your blood boils.. Clive: So I should sacrifice myself?

Her: No. A small trickle of blood will cleanse you.. Clive looked at me..

Clive: i swear if Flare doesn't wake up after this, i will kill her myself! Me: We are on the right path Sire..

Clive looked at her.. Clive: i will do it..

She turned to her people..

Her: přineste meč smutku (bring the sword of sorrow)

One of her people started running to wherever God knows where.... She then looked at us..

Iris: Ohw you guys I get it now.. Me: Enlighten us Iris

Her: You guys are stepping in the river of curses.. Charlie:

What is the river of curses?

Iris: The river of curses brings about death. Those who find themselves in it will remain there until they die..

Charlie: i am not following..

Iris: The Inferno people harbours the river of curses as their only weapon to fight off those that bring destruction to their wold. Anyone who attempts to enter at the garden of Evil, they find themselves trapped in the river of curses. A royal blood will have to be spilled to save their lives..

Once a royal blood is sprinkled then the Inferno people will know that you mean them no harm..

Me: Only royal blood?

Her: No, even the blood of the pure hearted.. Clive: i am willing to sprinkle my blood..

We then saw the water starting to boil.. Me: What's happening?

It was almost as if like the water will erupt into an earthquake. The woman looked at us..

Her: it is too late now, you have awakened the unknown.

Nothing can save you now! The water was boiling and it was rising, it moved from our knees to our waists.. At that instant we came face to face with death.

PART 54

[Journey to the garden of evil part 4] # NAOMI

The water wasn't having any Mercy on us, they kept on rising and rising. Nothing was gonna save us now, we were standing face to face with death.. As we were standing there and giving in, i

then saw one of the Inferno people making their way to us with the sword. He stood at a far distance and he just threw it at us....

Their Elder was still standing there she shouted "Take the sword and cut yourself with it".

What was fascinating about all of this, was the fact that the Sword stood above the water level..

Clive Quickly swam to get it, and then he cut himself on his hand and let his blood drip in the water.

As soon as his blood came in contact with the water, the water calmed down and went back to being Normal...

The only thing that was not normal about the water, was the fact that they went from being blue and sparkling, to being pure red...

The Elder looked at us..

Her: You can now come out, you are cleansed..

That was a relief, we all stepped out of the water and made our way to her....

As i looked at her from up close, her eyes were yellow Gold with a cat like pupil in the middle of the eyes.. Her whole body was blue and sparkling as if like she had glitters on.. She was only wearing blue leaves that covered her genitals, her breasts and everything else were exposed...she had long silky black hair and pointy ears. She was also very tall, taller than our heights combined..

Her: Please come with..

She led the way and we followed her... She led us into this beautiful open field with Blue rocks shaped like chairs.

Her: Sit

We all sat down..

Her: i welcome you all to our land. We the Inferno people are very peaceful people.. Clive sent out a mocking laugh.

We all looked at him..

Him: Don't act like you didn't see them trying to kill us back there, what's peaceful about that?

Elder: We only aim to protect ourselves from alien invasion.

Clive: We are not aliens

Elder: You are a different species from us..

Me: How come you know how to speak our language?

Her: i am blessed with the gift of adapting to any language of foreign spices.. Charlie: Can we get to what we are here for please?

I looked at the Elder..

Me: We are here to get the Devil's claw plant to bring back one of our own. We believe that you have trapped her soul in the future. She is pregnant and she's dying along with the baby..

Her: We cannot give the plant away without our Queen..

Clive: What Queen are you talking about?

Her: The Inferno Queen, the one that holds the Dragon fire..

Charlie: Look we don't know anything about any Inferno Queen. All we want is just the plant..

Her: The devil's claw protects us from Danger. Giving it away will make us vulnerable, because we will have nothing to protect us..

Me: How many do you have?

Her: We have a garden for it. But not even one can turn up missing.. Clive: So much Bullshit for peaceful people!

Clive was starting to get very irritated that he stood up.. Me: Sire Please.

Him: No listen to what she's saying! We came here for nothing! He then started walking away..

Me: i apologise for his behaviour. This is very hard on him.

Her: i sense the love that he has for this woman..

Me: Yes and it's Killing him to see her slowly dying.

Elder: We Inferno people like to help, but we cannot without our Queen.. How is it that she wasn't seeing that Zoe was their Queen..

We were still sitting there, and fruits were brought for us. It wasn't our usual fruits that we used too, was just things i have never seen before...

Her: Eat so you gain strength

Charlie and i started eating and we also gave some to Zoe..

Clive wasn't back yet, i think getting fresh air will do him good..

I wanted to communicate with Iris and ask her about this situation, like why aren't the Inferno people recognising Zoe as their Queen. I wanted to find a way to communicate with her without Sire hearing

So there i was roaming around in that garden alone i had separated from everyone. I was trying to find a way to communicate with Iris when i saw the Elder coming up to me....

Elder: your mind is Troubled I exhaled and looked at her..

Me: We have brought your Queen to you.. Her: i know

Me: So why aren't you giving us the plant?

Her: The Queen must know her true self and her true powers. Her true self must be brought out..

Me: How do we do that?

Her: We must find a way to ignite her power.. Me: i don't know how we are going to do that Her: there is a way..

Me: How?

Her: i have seen the relationship between her and The Prince.. Me: So what about it?

Her: if we threaten to kill the Prince she will threaten to strike back. Her true self will show..

Me: Clive must not find out like this..

Her: He has too, it's about time. You need to save Flare you are running out of time.. As much as this is gonna kill Clive but this has to be done...

The plan was implemented. Clive was captured and threatened to be killed. He was tied to a pole with the Inferno people pointing the Arrows at him. Clive had no idea what was happening, he was very dumb struck, and Zoe was standing there crying and all in all i was hoping that she gets angry..

Clive: i thought we are pass this.. Elder: You are not of pure heart!

Clive: Come on, i calmed the waters didn't i? Elder: but your heart is not pure.

She looked at her people, and one sent out an arrow straight to Clive's rib. Clive screamed in Agony. He was starting to bleed too..

Zoe: No.. (Crying)

Me: Was that Necessary? Elder: Yes

Charlie: This is not right, i thought you are peaceful people.. The Elder looked at her people again. They sent out another arrow, and that became too much for Zoe that her anger surfaced. She started screaming and while she was screaming a flame shaped like a dragon appeared behind her. We were all blown away as we stepped back. Zoe was lifted up to the air and the Dragon flame surrounded her. She wasn't the little Zoe anymore, her true self was shown and she was much older she looked at least 25....

I then saw The Inferno people bowing before her.. Them: ať žije královna (Long live the Queen)

I stood there shocked, i didn't know that Zoe possessed such a power.

PART 55

[Journey to the garden of evil part 5]

#NAOMI

Clive's wound was treated immediately. Unlike us, the Inferno people use herbs mostly to attend to their health problems or injuries...

They cleaned his wound with what they call "Pure water" then after they mixed some leaves and put them against the wound to stop the bleeding.. They laid him on some stretcher that was composed of leaves....

I was still a bit shocked at the turn of events, i mean Zoe looked beautiful as her true self. She was a bit tall, was wearing a white dress, and had long silky black hair. She looked nothing like her people though, although her pupils were Red reflecting her great power....

We were sitting at some rocks, just me her and Charlie...

Her: Who would've thought?

Me: Who would've thought indeed.. Charlie Still looked very shocked..

Charlie: So you not the little innocent shy Zoe? She laughed..

Her: Not really. I am the Inferno..

Charlie looked at her still unbelieving.. She looked a bit down rather than happy. Me: What's wrong?

Her: i don't know how Clive is gonna feel about this when he wakes up.. Me: I'm sure he will understand..

She shook her head no..

Her: i don't think that his gonna take it lightly..

Me: Either way, you are the reason why people like us are gonna live free at Callanine without the fear of being executed..

Her: i guess so.. You guys must not forget to come and visit me.. Please bring Flare along

Me: i sure will.

Charlie: Speaking of Flare, i think we should get going.. Zoe:

Yes please.. Go save my sister..

We all stood up.....

Me: Its time to get Sire..

We started walking to where Clive was..

Fortunately Sire was awake when we got there. He was sitting up straight and they were serving him some beverage of which they claimed it will give him strength to cross over, because he was weak from losing alot of blood.....

Me: Sire it's time to go..

Him: So are we getting the plant? Me: Yes we are..

Her: Then we can go.. Where is Zoe?

One of the Inferno people helped him to get up, i could see that he was still in pain.. Him: Where is Zoe Naomi?

So that means he didn't see what happened? Me: You don't remember what happened? Him: meaning?

I looked at Zoe..

Sire: Naomi what's going on?

I looked at Zoe and indicated that she must tell him..

Zoe: i... I am Zoe

He looked at her and laughed.. Him: Nice try..

She took a deep breath before talking again...

Zoe: i remember you Bursting at Charlie's house to get me and you found him dead drunk. You were with Flare and you were very angry, you asked me several times if he has touched me In a way that made me feel uncomfortable This was very hard for her, her voice was starting to break and she was also tearing up.. I noticed that as she was tearing up the weather started changing, it was now cloudy as if like it was going to rain..

Zoe: i remember the first time when you bumped to us at the Mall, you told me that i am a Princess. I remember i told you that I wanted to ride a Unicorn and you.... Clive: Stop please....

This was getting too much for Clive... Zoe: Sir..

Clive: No stop!!! (yelling)

The Inferno people started getting closer with their bow and arrows, but Zoe stopped them..

Zoe: stojan zpět!! (Stand back)

Clive was just finding it hard to accept everything.. Clive: You cannot possibly be Zoe..

Zoe: i am..

Tears started running down her cheeks..

Zoe: i am a witch! I am the Queen of this place.. I am the Inferno, i am the keeper of the Dragon flame..

Clive looked at her for a while..

Zoe: i am a Versini.. The descendant of the Great Mishaka Versini.. Clive: No!!.. No, Zoe you cannot be a witch!!!

Her: i am!! (shouting)

As she started getting more and more emotional, lightening flashed across the sky and the clouds were turning dark..

Clive: So if you are a witch.. That means that Flare is.. Zoe nodded her head..

Zoe: Because of Me, you supposed to open up your heart, because of me you supposed to bring about a new world order by accepting sorcery in your world... Clive looked at Zoe, i could see that he was breaking. But his Anger cloud his judgement and heart..

Clive: Never!! I will never accept sorcery in my world, people like you deserve to die!!!

Zoe looked at him for a long time, anger was building up inside of her, i could see the Dragon of flame slowly forming. I held her hand, she then looked at me..

Me: Don't do it..

Tears still fell from her face.. She calmed down and just ran off.. Charlie tried running after her but i stopped him...

Me: We have to get to Flare

The Elder walked to us holding the Devil's claw plant.. She

gave it to me. Her: go before its too late
I took it and thanked her.. We waved goodbye to them and
went to the tunnel... We made it back safely into our world.
We found ourselves at Flare's house in the
lounge where it all started. I looked back and realised that
the tunnel had closed from the wall..

Iris showed up from the kitchen.. Her: Finally you guys are
back!

Me: We weren't gone for that long though.. Her: You
actually have been gone for a month..

Charlie: No it cannot be, we have been gone for 3 or 5 days

Iris: Its actually been a month..

Me: The Inferno people don't work with our time. Their time
is much slower than ours..

Charlie: So can we go and save Flare? Iris: Uhm yeah about
that..

We looked at her..

Iris: Unfortunately Flare is no more Me: What do you mean?
She gave us a newspaper..

Her: She passed on 3 days ago.. Me: No it cannot be

Iris: She's said to be buried next week

Clive took the newspaper and looked at it. He then threw it
against the wall.. Him: Maybe her being dead is a good thing!
He then started walking out.. After all our hard work, at the
end we failed Flare..

PART 56

[Journey to the garden of evil part 6] [THE RETURN OF FLARE]

We were eating breakfast at the Royal house. It was me, Sire, The Queen, Iris, and Princess Maxima..

Everyone was silent and concentrated much on their food..

Queen: Clive Is the anything else you want added to Flare's funeral?

Clive was trying so hard to be heartless about this situation, he was trying so hard not to care about Flare, but the harder he tried the more he hurt himself. I could see that Deep down he was hurting.....

He looked at his mother and then shook his head no..

Queen: I know how much Flare meant to you and I'm sorry..

He kept quiet..

Maxima: We tried contacting Flare's family, to let them know about this. But unfortunately we couldn't find them..

The Queen looked at me.

Queen: Naomi would you help us with that? Me: Ofcause your highness..

We then continued eating breakfast in peace, and then when we were done everyone went on to do to their own things....

Iris and i went to Flare's house. We wanted to consult the book of spells and see if we cannot find a spell that will bring Flare back to life.. I was also finding it hard to believe that she was gone, it just wasn't right.....

Iris: The book of spells Has alot of pages, even the dictionary has got nothing on it.. Me: Just page through you will find something..

She would go through it and then find nothing. After a few minutes i would relieve her and go through it too.. We were taking turns..

It took us Almost 2 hours to find what we were looking for..

Her: The Goblin

I went up to her..

Her: it says here that Goblins can interfere with Time.. Me: So how is a Goblin going to help us?

Her: The Goblin can reverse time, to just before the day that Flare died..

Me: Won't it affect me, Sire and Charlie? I mean won't we find ourselves in the Garden of Evil?

Her: No because you guys are in our world now, you won't be affected..

Me: I'm not sure about this. Goblins are said to be evil and crooks, and also tricky.. Iris: We just bribe it with Gold coins..

Me: Where are we gonna get ancient Gold coins?

Her: We don't have too. We just change a note into 50cents..

Me: i like how you think..

She closed the book of spells.. Her: Let's go then Partner We both walked up to the door, and when we opened Sire was standing there with 2 Guards..

Me: Sire..

He looked at the Guards.. Sire: You can go in They walked In and started searching.. Me: What's going on Sire?

Him: We are here to seize the book of spells

What i like about the book of spells is that It's magical, so in such situations it knows how to hide itself..

He looked at us..

Him: What are you two doing here?

Iris i looked at each other, we didn't know what to say..

Me: Well we... We wanted to sort out Flare's things. Maybe Donate some to the woman shelter..

He looked at us for a long time. Didn't know if he believed us or not... Him: Okay if you say so then..

He looked at Iris..

Him: I must take you back home.. Iris: Now?

Sire: Yes you have served your purpose. I don't need you

anymore... Iris: Well i was thinking that i should stay until Flare's funeral

Sire: You don't even Know Flare

Her: I.. All of this has made me to grow fond of her..

Sire: i have promised your people that i will bring you back..

Her: Yes i know Sire. But please, can i stay until the funeral?

He looked at her, and then Exhaled..

Sire: Its fine you can stay.. Her: Thank you Sire..

She looked at me and then we smiled at each other..

The Guards came back from the other rooms empty handed..

Sire looked at us Again..

Sire: Where is the book of spells?

Me: Its safely put away in the Garden of Evil, They need it more than us... He continued looking at us..

Him: You guys spell out S.N.E.A.K.Y what are you up too?

Iris: We are up to nothing. We were just going to do some shopping at the Farmer's market.. Although we have nothing but looking won't hurt. Right Naomi?

Me: Right..

He put his hand in his pocket, and came back with a wallet..

He took a couple of Notes and gave us..

Me: Thank you Sire Iris: Let's go then..

We walked out and started with our Journey..

We went to the Royal house first and got the devil's claw plant, we then went to get change of 50cents. When we were done with that, we walked to the caves to find the Goblin.....

The walk to the cave was not Pap and vleis, it was a long Journey and the sun had no Mercy...

Even though our Journey looked like it was never gonna end.

We finally arrived at the caves and went inside.. Iris took out a white cloth and waved it around..

Iris: We came in peace, and we seeking help..

It was silent. The only thing we heard was the fountain of running water.. Me: i don't think the Goblin is here

Iris: He has too.. Goblin never leaves his cave for safety..

Me: Ohh well i might just as well sit down and catch my breath..

As i was about to sit down, we heard something laughing. It was laughing and moving around very fast. And then in a nick of an eye, it was standing before us... That freaked us out a bit..

It was very green, it was short, looked like a funny creature.... Iris took out the coins..

Iris: We need help..

He took the coins and sniffed them while laughing.. Iris: Are you gonna help us?

He looked at us..

Him: What can Goblin do?

Me: We want someone awoken from the world of the dead, we want you to reverse time..

He nodded his head and Walked out while we followed him... Iris: Ohh and can you make Sire forget that Flare is a witch? The Goblin looked at her..

Him: Goblin only reverse time...

He stood at the entrance and looked at the sky.. He raised up his hands and everything started moving backwards very fast.. I saw the clouds moving, it was just an astonishing experience....

After a while everything was in place. Him: Goblin reversed Time..

He then looked at us..

Him: Goblin will ask a favour one day.. Iris: uhm ya sure..

She looked at me..

Her: Let's go, we can't lose her for the second time.. We made our way to the hospital..

When we got to the hospital, we found The Queen she was in Flare's ward. And Flare was laying there peacefully..iris and i looked at each other all happy that it worked..

Queen: Naomi

Me: How is she Your highness?

Her: She's getting worse, Doctors think that she won't make it.. I looked at Iris..

Iris: Your highness can we go and get something to drink?

Queen: i could use a drink, Latte to be exact..

Me: I'll be here with Flare..

The Queen stood up and they walked out.. I went and closed the door behind them. I then made my way to Flare, i took a piece of the plant and put it in her mouth. I stood there praying that it works...

After a few seconds she stopped breathing. There was a flat line across the EKG.. I lowered my head, it didn't work.....

#FLARE

I found myself in this peaceful pure white room. I was wearing white clothes.. I looked up and there was this shining light, more like a Sun.. It came closer and as it got closer my body started glowing....

As i had no idea what was happening, i saw myself floating in the air at the hospital, i saw my soul going back into my body...

When i was fully in my body, i woke up Gasping for air.. I saw Naomi standing beside me..

Me: Naomi

She looked at me, she looked a bit shocked.. Me: What happened?

She came to me and hugged me. Her: Thank God it worked.. I hugged her back not knowing what was happening..

PART 57

[A HEART THAT ENDURES]

The doctor was checking me out. She was very shocked at the fact that i recovered so quickly, because in her own words “i was practically dead”. It was just me and Naomi in the ward while the doctor was still trying to make sense of everything.... Doc: This just makes no sense.

Naomi: Faith Doctor. There’s nothing that beats faith and Miracles...

Doc: i understand that but Flare was practically dead. And now she’s fine, the baby is also fine. It just doesn’t make sense for someone who had a seizure, who almost had kidney failure and also went on Cardiac arrest..

I looked at Naomi..

Naomi: Doctor let’s just say that fate interfered... Doc: unless the spiritual healer saga worked..

I looked at her confused.

Her: i told Sire to get you a spiritual healer, I’m guessing he took my advice...

Me: I’m guessing so too..

She Gave me a pic of the scan.

Her: Your baby is healthy, and the heartbeat is strong.. A few days the heartbeat was very faint.

I took it and looked at it, you don’t know the emotions that took over.. Me: That’s my baby?

The doctor smiled at me.. Her: Yeap that’s your baby..

I didn’t really understand what was going on in the scan, all i know is that it reflected a life. A life that I’m carrying..

When the doctor was done with running the tests on me, she said she’s gonna come back to check up on me later because she still have other patients to attend too. She requested the Nurse to bring me food though because i had lost weight from not eating..

I looked at Naomi..

Me: Clive Is gonna be happy when he sees this.. She looked down.

Me: Where is he? I thought he was gonna be here when i wake up.. Naomi said nothing, she just continued looking down..

Me: Naomi what's going? And where is Zoe too? She looked at me..

Her: i don't even know where to start..

Me: You scaring me Naomi.. What's going on? She pulled the chair and sat down.

She went to tell me everything that happened while i was in a coma..

She told me about them travelling to The Garden of Evil, she told me about the devil's claw plant, she told me about Zoe being The Inferno Queen, and she also told me about Clive knowing that i am a witch.....

I truly didn't know how to respond to everything that I've just heard, i was beyond shocked and speechless, especially with Clive knowing that i am a witch..

Her: Say something..

Me: i.. I don't know what to say i.. I mean..

I was stuttering, i didn't know what to to Say...

As i was sitting there trying to take everything in, i saw the Queen coming in she was with some girl..

As soon as she laid her eyes on me, she dropped the fruit salad that she was holding..

Her: Flare..

I was shocked that she would even come to see me, i mean the last time i checked she hated me..

She slowly walked up to me and gave me a hug.. Her: i am so happy and shocked at the same time.. She broke the hug...

Her: You looked like you weren't going to make it dear.. Me: i guess I'm stronger than how people see me.. Naomi: Its the

spiritual help that we got her, it worked.. Queen: That is good..

She looked at my tummy.

Her: How is my.. How is the baby? Me: The baby is fine....

I showed her the pic, she was overwhelmed with different emotions..

Her: I'm glad that you and the baby are well.. Did the Doctor check on you? Me: Yes and said we are fine..

Her: i will call Clive I'm sure he will be happy to hear that you are awake. He has been very worried..

Me: No!!

She looked at me..

Me: the doctor said i must rest, and knowing Clive he would wanna be here for the whole day..

Her: You have a point there..

She looked at Naomi and the girl that i didn't know, but from what Naomi said i assumed it was Iris..

Her: i think we should give her some space so she can rest..

Naomi: i think soo too

They all said their goodbyes and they went.....

weeks passed, i was recovering very well. I was gaining a bit of weight mostly because the Dietician was very strict with my diet.. I had learned how to walk too, and how to do other things..

Clive didn't bother to come and see me, but the Queen and Naomi came everyday....

The Doctor was happy with my speedy recovery that she discharged me....

I was relieved that I was going home, but i wasn't looking forward to going home.. I mean how am i gonna face Clive???.....

Anyway the Queen and Naomi Came to fetch me, and we drove home.... Some of the hospital staff was sad to see me going home, because in that period of 2 weeks i had made

good friends with a couple of nurses, but i promised them that i will pop in every now and then to say hi.....

I was wheeled out of the hospital in a wheelchair because i was still trying to get used to walking again. My knees would get weak and shake when I stand for a long time, and i also feel some tingling sensation....

We got home after a few minutes, and i was very scared i won't lie.. The Queen opened the door for me..

Queen:Welcome home dear.

I slowly walked in with Naomi holding me... Me: Thank you..

I walked into the kitchen and it was empty and very quiet the was no one there.. Naomi: Think you should go to your room and rest a little..

Me: Okay..

We slowly walked to the stairs, and before we could even climb i saw Clive and Princess Maxima standing at the balcony. They looked like they were having a good chat because they were laughing and all that.. I stood there and looked at them until they noticed me..

Clive walked out of the balcony with Maxima following him, but he didn't come to me. He passed me as if like i didn't exist and went to exit through the kitchen door..

That was a sword struck through my heart, that moment killed me i won't lie.. I had lost him forever this time around.

When will my heart stop enduring soo much pain? Naomi put her hand around my shoulders...

Her: Give him some time, he will come around..

I turned and looked at her, with tears in my eyes..

Me: i have lost him Naomi.. I Have lost him forever..

After saying that, i felt a sharp pain arising from my heart..

PART 58

I was in my bedroom. I needed some time alone, i needed to be alone. I was very hurt by what Clive did. I'm not saying that he shouldn't be angry, all I'm saying is that we should at least talk about it...

I heard a knock at the door while i was laying on my bed thinking.. I sat up straight..

Me: Come in..

The door opened and Maxima Walked in... Her: Hi..

Me: Hey

She closed the door and came to sit next to me.. Her: How are you feeling?

Me: I'm hanging in there...

Princess Maxima is the last person i expected to set foot in my room...

Her:Look Flare we don't have to hate each other, we don't have to be enemies... Me: i never saw you as an Enemy..

Her: Then i guess you'll agree with me when I say we don't have to be in competition either?

I nodded my head..

Her: if we can't be sisters then at least let's be friends. I mean we are marrying the same guy..

I didn't Say nothing i just looked down... Her: What's wrong?

Me: Its nothing..

Her: Please trust me... I looked at her...

Me: i don't think Clive would wanna Marry me anymore..

Her: That's Nonsense! Clive is crazy about you...

I shook my head no.. Me: Maxima...

Her: Clive loves you Flare. He talks about you everyday....

Me: Are saying that because you trying to make me feel better?

Her: I'm saying that because it's true.. You know when we were standing at the balcony he was telling me about the

happy memories he shared with you..

Me: Such as?

Her: He told me about Zoe and the Unicorn story, and alot...you don't know how scared he was when you were in that Coma..

I believe her but, now that my secret is out i don't think Clive still feels the same way about me..

Me: i see you guys are getting along..

Her: and it will only end there. We will only get along, but he will never love me.. Me: Don't talk like that

Her: No man will agree to marry a barren. For Clive to have agreed to marry me truly means alot to me..

Me: I'm sorry to hear that..

Her: Anyway enough about my sad story, i have brought you something.. She took the paper bag that she came in with and passed it to me..

Me: You shouldn't have Her: i wanted too..

I opened it and it was a book about pregnancy judging from the cover it had a pregnancy woman..

Her: it will teach you what you need to know.. Me: That is very sweet of you thank you..

Her: You welcome... How about we have a girl's day out tomorrow? Me: That sounds fun..

Her: We can go to a beauty spa, i think you need a full body massage.. Me: That could work..

Her: and you need to get new clothes... Me: What's wrong with my clothes?

Her: Ohh nothing just that you need to wear like Royalty.. I just looked at her and smiled..

Her: What's the smile for?

Me: "Royalty" i don't think i can get used to that.. Her: Well you better get used to it..

There was a knock again at the door, we both looked at each other wondering who that can be..

Me: Come in.

To my surprise it was the Queen.. Queen: Am i interrupting something? Me: No, you can come in your highness..

She closed the door and came to sit with us...

Her: I just wanted to check up on you and the baby.. Me: We are fine..

Her: You know Flare i wanna apologise for all those bad things i said to you.. Me: Its water under the bridge Your highness..

Her: now I'm happy that you marrying my son. I looked at her shocked...

Me: Really?

Her: Yes.. I mean i know you, i have known you ever since you were 14. I think you are a better partner for him..

Me: Thank you your highness.. She looked at us..

Her: and i want you both to get along. I don't wanna be caught up in between you too..

Maxima: Flare is a good person your highness, and i know we can make this work.. Me: Yes we can..

Queen: Well let's not hold you up, the Doctor said you must get lots of rest.. Me: I'm tired of sleeping..

Queen: We cannot argue with the doctor.. Come on Maxima we will see her later.. They both stood up...

Maxima: i will ask the Gwen to prepare you a meal when you wake up.. Me: Thank you alot..

They smiled at me and Walked out..

I like this new attitude from the both of them.. I really need them as a family because i have no one now....

I slept for a while, and woke up a bit later.. I got out of bed and made my way to the bathroom to wash my face and rinsed my mouth...

When i was done, i made my way to the kitchen to get something to eat...

As i was slowly going down the stairs, i saw Clive Standing by

the kitchen sink. I stopped halfway and wanted to go back to my room, but i didn't.. I cannot avoid him forever...

I slowly made my way to the kitchen, and he was still standing there Drinking coffee he was starring out of the window....

Me: Hi..

He kept quiet..

Me: Naomi told me about the Devil's claw plant thank you for saving me and the baby..

He put the mug down..

Him: i should have let you die.. Me: You don't mean that..

Him: Is there something you wanna tell me? Me: I'm sorry that you had to find out like that... Him: Why you never told me the truth?

Me: i was Scared

Him: So you made me fall in love with you under false pretences Me: That's not true..

Him: it is true!!!... Tell me something, is our baby going to get this curse? Me: Curse?

Him: What do you prefer to call it? Me: a Gift..

He laughed.. Him: Yea right..

Me: Clive i didn't choose to be a.. I.. Him: to be a witch?

He then looked at me..

Him: That's what you are, you shouldn't be Ashamed.. Me: i am not ashamed

Him: Yes you shouldn't be, I mean you ruin people's lives, you bring about misery and terror..

Me: I'm not about that

Him: Sorcery is the same.. You are evil Flare. Me: Clive..

Him: get out of my sight, your presence disgusts Me..

I didn't argue any further with him, i just got out of his sight as he asked me too...

PART 59

WHEN 2 HEARTS COLLIDE]

I was in my bedroom sobbing. I didn't know what to do or say to get Clive back. Maybe he is right, maybe i am cursed for real. Why me though? Why was i chosen to be a witch? I kept on asking myself those type of questions while crying. For the first time in my life i wanted to die, i no longer have a family. Zoe is probably happy wherever she is. Why couldn't it be me instead of her? Why wasn't i the Inferno Queen? Life is very unfair.....

I heard a knock at the door as i was sitting there and crying.. I quickly composed myself and wiped my tears...

Me: Come in.. Gwen walked in..

Her: Forgive me your highness i don't mean to disturb you..

Me: Its okay Gwen, how can i help you?

Her: You have a visitor your highness.. Me: a visitor?

Her: Yes your highness

Me: Did you ask for their name? Her: No your highness i didn't Me: Okay im coming..

She bowed.. And then walked out. Just to think that not so long ago it was me in her shoes, Life is full of surprises...

I got out of bed and went to wash my face, that didn't help much because my eyes still showed that I was crying....

When i was done, i made my way downstairs. As i was going down the stairs i saw Charlie standing at the kitchen. I was suddenly overwhelmed by different emotions, i was at the verge of crying because i was very excited to see him.. I walked up to him and hugged him while crying..

Him: Hey what's wrong?

Me: I'm just happy to see you.. He hugged me tight..

Him: I'm happy to see you too..

After a few seconds we broke the hug..

Him: just wanted to see how you are holding up Me: I'm

getting there..

He looked at me.. Him: What's wrong?

I shook my head no as tears fell down.. Him: You can talk to me, what's wrong? I cleared my throat..

Me: Clive.. He knows I'm a witch.

He didn't show any emotion of being shocked.. Him: That i know..so what is he gonna do, kill you? I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: i really don't know.. He signed...

Him: Why don't we just go out for ice cream? Looks like fresh air can do you good... Me: Think that would be great..

I called Gwen and told her that I'm going out with a friend... We walked out and surprisingly Charlie has a car now. It's not new though, it looks like a second hand but a second hand that was in good condition...

Me: Wow you have a car? Him: i was tired of walking..

We got in and he drove us to the mall...

We got to the mall and made our way to milky Lane. I got a vanilla ice cream covered in caramel, and Charlie got a vanilla ice cream covered in chocolate... Him: Its good to have you back Flare..

I smiled..

Me: Its good to be back..

I continued eating my ice cream

Me: i wish Zoe was here when i woke up from the coma, i really wanted to see her.. Him: I'm still trying to accept that she's an Inferno..

Me: I'm sure it was a shocking thing to see..

Him: it was. I mean her transforming like that, from being 5years old and to being a woman was just wow..

Me: i wish to see her

Him: Maybe you can visit her, ask Naomi and Iris to do their thing.. Me: Ya i will ask them..

Charlie drove me home a bit later, after we've had fun at the

mall. He even bought me a big teddy bear..

We entered at the kitchen

Me: Thank you very much i really had a nice time.. Him: I'm happy that you did..

He came closer and hugged me... Him: We should do this more often Me: Yes we should..

We were interrupted by someone clearing their throat. We broke the hug and it was Princess Maxima with Clive. I was a bit scared seeing Clive Standing there and witnessing all of that especially since he doesn't like Charlie at all..

Charlie: I'll see you around Me: Okay

He then walked out.. I turned around and looked at them, Clive reflected no emotion he was just standing there...

I went and passed them, then walked to my room...

I got to my bedroom and nicely placed the teddy bear on the bed.. I went to the wardrobe and found Zoe's clothes..

I took them and put them on the bed and started folding them. Doing all that made me emotional, it dawned on me that i truly miss her..

A voice interrupted me while i was busy folding the clothes..

Voice: i miss her too

I stopped folding the clothes and turned around, Clive was standing there with his arms folded..

He then walked up to me.. He held both my hands.. Him: I'm sorry.. I'm sorry about everything...

Me: it's okay..

Him: the harder i try to hate you, the more I hurt myself.. I love you Flare and i am going to try and accept you and who you are..

Me: And I'm sorry that i wasn't honest with you, i should've long told you..

Him: i understand why you didn't tell me, I'm not an easy person to open up too.. Me: You right about that..

He pulled me closer to him and kissed me.. Lord knows how

much i missed that.. Him: i love you

Me: i love you too

I rested my head on his chest, while he put his hands around me..

PART 60

[THE POSSESSION PART 1]

We were laying on my bed with the duvet covering our naked bodies after being intimate.. I was laying my head on his chest and he was playing with my fingers..

Him: Flare..

I raised my head up and looked at him.. Him: So how does it work?

Me: How does what work?

Him: being a witch, do you like carry a broom? Are you a fly by night.. I laughed at what he said..

Me: No that's ancient. I just have the gift of seeing and communicating with the dead.. Him: That's interesting..

Me: Do you believe in ghosts?

Him: i don't believe in anything that science hasn't proven to exist.. Me: Ohw

He leaned over and kissed me on my forehead. Him: but i believe in you..

Me: Thank you..

Him: Are you allowed to go to church? Me: I'm not evil Sire..

Him: I'm just asking your highness because i wanna know more about what you are.. Me: You can't even say it,you can't call me a witch can you?

He ran his hands all over my naked body, under the duvet...

Him: Bear with me okay? This is all very new to me..

Me: Fair enough..

I didn't really expect him to accept everything now..

Him: Your friend Charlie didn't seem to be amazed at the fact that you are a witch.. Me: Ohw ya he knows, i told him long time ago...

He gave me a weird look..

Him: So you find it easy to tell your friend but you can't tell me? Me: i don't wanna fight..

Him: Do you love him? Me: i love you

Him: i didn't ask you if you love me, i asked you if you love him? I looked at him..

Me: i love Charlie as a brother, Because he has always been there for me and Zoe.. He didn't say anything...

Me: Can we stop talking about Charlie, because we end up fighting.. Him: if you stop fucking with him then we will stop fighting...

I didn't say nothing, i just got out of bed and started dressing up.. Him: Where you going?

Me: i need some air

Him: We not done talking.. Me: i am..

After dressing up, i Walked out of the bedroom with him yelling my name..

I didn't really go out of the house, i went and stood at the balcony not too far from my bedroom. I wish that Clive could accept my friendship with Charlie because Charlie is a part of my life..

As i was standing, i heard someone singing behind me. I turned back and noticed that the sound came from one of the guests rooms, the guest room at the corner to be exact.. I started making my way there, following the sound of this beautiful voice..

When i got there, i stood at the door and listened to the voice. It was a female voice, and she was singing what sounded like one of those bollywood Indian songs...

I knocked and she stopped singing.. I tried turning the door handle but the door was locked.. Me: Hello? Can you hear me?

She didn't say anything, just kept quiet..

I stood there and kept quiet too hoping that she will sing again since I disturbed her but she didn't sing.. I then heard weird sounds as if like she was dancing and the bangles she was wearing made noise.

Me: I know there's someone in there, please open the door..

I then heard a voice calling my name, i turned around and it was The Queen i really didn't hear her coming...

Me: Your highness

Her: What are you doing?

Me: i.. Uhm.. I thought i heard something.. But it probably was my imagination..

I cannot tell the Queen about me and what i am.. She looked at the door then looked at me.. Her: Yes it was probably your imagination,because there's no one there and that room hasn't been opened in a long time..

Me: If i may ask why?

She stretched her hand out to me, and i stretched mine to meet hers halfway we then started walking..

Her: My husband once put to death some woman who was thought to be practicing sorcery,her husband exposed her..

Me: That's not good..

Her: The King sent out Guards to go and search her house and seize everything that spelled out sorcery. The Guards went to her house and seized everything of hers including her jewellery and hair brushes. Then Sire kept everything in that Room as a reminder of victory,that he defeated sorcery once more..

Me: That's terrible

Her: So we never go to that bedroom we consider it unclean and cursed.. So please dear stay away from it...

Me: Okay.

She looked at me and smiled..

Her: Why don't you go and freshen up, dinner will be ready in 10.. Me: Yes your highness..

She smiled at me again and Walked downstairs..

I stood there and looked at the bedroom for a while, and then i went to my bedroom to freshen up..

Clive was dressing up when i got there.. Him: That was quick.

I was still thinking about what the Queen had shared with

me.. He looked at him.

Him: Are you okay? I looked at him.. Me: huh?

Him: What's wrong? Me: Its nothing

He still looked at me making it pretty evident that he doesn't believe me.. Me: Clive can i ask you something?

Him: Yes you can..

Me: You see that guest room at the corner? Him: Yes what about it?

Me: What's in there?

He shrugged his shoulders..

Him: I don't know, because we really never opened that room.. Me: You were never told what's in there?

Him: No.. Why are you asking? Me: Because i..

I looked at him. Although he knows that i am a witch, but it's hard talking to him about it.. Me: I'm just curious to know what's in there...

Him: if you say so then..

Me: Ya.. Uhm i need to freshen up for dinner.. Him: I'll go and shower too..

He came over and kissed me on my forehead again... Him: see you at the dinner table...

Me: Okay...

He then walked out.. I was busy pacing up and down thinking to myself that i need to know what's in there, i need to find out who that is..

I know i have agreed to let it go, but i can't let it go it was like an inch in my brain.. I couldn't contain myself any longer, so i made my way to that room again making sure that no one was following Me.. I stood at the door and knocked...

Me: i know that you were killed because of being a sorcerer.. I wanna help set your spirit free, you cannot be stuck in there forever..

There was silence for a while, then i had a chain being dragged it was moving closer to the door..

Me: Hello..

Someone then started banging on the from inside the bedroom... Voice: Burax məniiii (release me)

I looked at the handle and only a skeleton key can open this door.. I need to help this woman cross over.

PART 61

[THE POSSESSION #2]

We were sitting at the dinner table eating a delicious dinner like a warm family that we were. Although i was with them physically, but my mind was at a place of its own. I couldn't forget about what i heard at that Guest room, i had alot of questions and less answers. I needed to find more about this ghost. I believe that if a spirit hasn't moved on, then they have unfinished Business with the living and until their purpose is carried out they won't be able to find the peace that they yearn for.....

I felt someone slightly Shaking my arm as i was trapped in the world of "Thinking" i raised my head up and it was Naomi..

Her: i asked you to pass me the salt. I took the salt and passed it to her... Naomi: Are you okay Flare?

I ran my eyes and looked at everyone. They all seemed to be focusing most of their attention to me..

Me: im.. I am fine, why wouldn't i be? Clive: Because you are very distant..

I took my fork and struck it on that roasted chicken.. Me: I'm fine..

Everyone went back to eating..

Queen: anyway do you guys want to have one big fat wedding, or you would rather have separate weddings?

Maxima looked at me, then after she looked at the Queen..

Maxima: Well i was thinking that we should maybe have separate weddings, because what i would want for my wedding is probably something that Flare wouldn't want for her wedding..

Queen: Fair enough..

My mind was still in the world of its own....

After dinner, i didn't waste any time i just went to my

bedroom and bathe then prepared for bed until Maxima disturb me by coming in..

Her: Have a few minutes? Me: Yeah Sure come in..

She came in and closed the door behind her..

I had just stepped out of the shower, my body was wet and i had a towel covering my wet body.. She sat on my bed..she looked agitated, she looked a bit scared and uncomfortable...

Me: Are you okay? Her: Yes I am..

I sat next to her.

Me: You wanted to talk to me about something? She exhaled..

Her: i don't know how to tell you this.. Me: uhm okay I'm all ears..

Her: Its about your friend, Charlie..

Okay that was a bit surprising, how would she know

Charlie??. Me: You know Charlie?

She nodded her head.. Me: How?

She looked down as if like she was ashamed of something..

Me: Maxima what's wrong?

I saw tears streaming down her face.. I put my hand over her shoulders.. She raised her head up and looked at me..

Her: Can i trust you?

Me: Yes, i mean i don't see a reason for you not to trust me... She closed her eyes, as tears fell..

Her: i have been seeing Charlie..

I suddenly froze after that comment. I didn't know what to say, or how to respond to that i just looked at her very speechless..

Her: Say something Flare Me: Wow i..

Her: See its that bad..

She stood up and went to stand by the sliding door that led to the balcony.. I stood up and went closer to her.

Me: But i don't understand, how and when did this happen?

Her: He came here a few times when you were at the

hospital. He was asking to see you and that's how we were exposed to each other..

Me: This was very unexpected, i really didn't see you and Charlie happening.. She turned around and looked at me..

Me: Everything is soo messed up, now I'm supposed to marry Clive.. I.. I don't know what to do Flare..

Me: Do you wanna Marry Clive? She shook her head no..

Her: a few months ago, yes i would've married Clive, i wanted to marry Clive.. But now..

She went and sat down on my bed..

Her: i don't know Flare. I love Charlie and for the fact that I'm royal and his not just makes it impossible for us to be together..

I sat next to her..

Me: i am still shocked i won't lie...

I was shocked and i was a bit hurt. I mean Charlie and i we have been friends for a very long time and he couldn't find it in his heart to tell me about maxima??

Me: You guys can make it work, i mean look at me and Clive Everyone was against our love, but now things have changed. I believe that you and Charlie can also make it work..

She looked at me, her eyes were full of hope..

Her: You and Clive are a living proof that true love exists.. Your love for each other is so strong that it makes Romeo and Juliet look stupid..

I chuckled..

Me: i don't know about that.. She held my hand..

Her: Thank you Flare, i really needed to get this off my chest.. Me: You welcome

She hugged me.. Her: Good night Me: Night

She stood up as far left.....

I sat there still trying to digest what she had told me..

I went to bed that night, but i couldn't fall asleep i was busy

tossing and turning.. I think i must've fallen asleep at around 04:00am....

Although i thought that my sleep was gonna be peaceful, especially after finding it hard to sleep for those few hours but unfortunately my sleep wasn't as peaceful.. I felt a cold breeze even though i had a duvet and a blanket covering my body..

I opened my eyes and realised that my sliding door was open and the curtain was just flapping around. When that happens, it usually confirms the presence of a spirit.. I slowly got out of bed and went to close the sliding door.. As i was about to lock it, i stepped on something that poked me painfully..

Me: ouch!!

I raised up my leg a bit with my hand squeezing that painful area. I glanced down and i couldn't believe my eyes, i actually had stepped on the skeleton key...

I picked it up and it must be a key that will open that guest room..

I was tempted, i wanted to go but at the same time i didn't wanna go..

...

I battled with myself until i decided to go.....

So there i was sneaking out of my room and into the guest room making sure that i don't wake anyone..

As i was slowly tip toeing my way there i felt someone touching me on my shoulder, i jumped in Terror.

Maxima: Shhhhh it's just me

I looked at her, she smelled like a brewery.. Me: Maxima shouldn't you be in bed?

She started laughing, and singing she was very drunk.

Her: "Work all night and have a drink of Ram.. Daylight come and mi wanna go home"..

Me: Shhhhhh

I pulled her towards the door..

Her: Charlie and i had a great time..

I opened the guest room door and pulled her in then locked and switched on the light..

Her: Wow this room is magnificent..

The room was out of this world, it was clean, it was neat, it was smelling good, had a lot of jewellery, had some saries, it was almost as if like someone was living there... It looked like someone was tidying it every now and then.

Me: Max, don't touch anything..

I went and looked around, the mirror was covered with a cloth...

As i was busy looking around Maxima took the cloth off from the mirror, and a female ghost appeared there..

Was a beautiful woman.

Me: Are.. Are you the one who? Max: Wow..

The Ghost smiled at us and i saw Maxima walking towards the mirror.. Me: Maxima no!!

I tried holding her back but the ghost sent me flying across the room and i came in contact with the wall before i fell down, and that was as far as i could remember..

PART 62

I heard someone calling my name, the voice was faint at first until after a few seconds when I could hear it clearly.. I slowly opened my eyes and Maxima was standing in front of me trying to wake me up by calling my name..

Her: Are you okay? You scared me.. She helped me get up from the floor.. Me: I'm alright..

My head was throbbing, think when i fell i bumped my head.. Her: Come let's go before someone finds us here... I looked at the mirror, and it was covered again with a cloth..

Me: Ya let's go.

We walked out, and locked the door off which she kept the key with her. Then she walked me to my bedroom..

Her: Are you sure that you are okay? Me: Yes we are fine..

Her: we?

Me: me and the baby Ofcause i think we are okay.. Her: What baby?

I looked at her, and she smiled.. Her: Just kidding..

Something was off about her, she looked sober..

Me: For someone who was very sloshed a few minutes ago, you very sober now... Her: i.. Believe me I'm still very drunk, just composing myself.

Me: if you say so..

I swear something was really off with Maxima.. Me: Good night then

She put her hands together and slightly bowed, you know how them Indians do it then after she walked out...

I tried falling asleep with alot of questions in my mind though about Maxima... I woke up the following morning, Gwen was in my bedroom tidying up..

Her: Forgive me your highness, i didn't mean to wake you up.. Me: Its alright Gwen..

I sat up straight..

Gwen: Can i get her majesty something? Me: No.. Think i just wanna bath..

Her: i will prepare your bath your highness Me: Thank you Gwen but I'll be fine..

Her: Really your highness i don't mind, it's my job to serve you..

The fact that I'm a Queen now really hasn't sank in yet...

Me: Well uhm thank you.

She walked up to my bathroom.. I sat on my bed waiting for her when there was a knock at my door..

Me: Come in.. Clive walked in...

Me: You are up early, it's only 6am.. Him: ya I'm an early bird..

He came and kissed me then sat on my bed while massaging my feet.. I looked at him, and he looked a bit tired couldn't stop yawning..

Me: Are you alright? He looked at me.. Him: Ya I'm alright

Me: one would swear that you didn't get much sleep last night.. He didn't say nothing, just went on to massage my feet..

Him: Flare.. Me: Yes?

Him: Last night i.. Me: You?

Gwen came from the bathroom..

Gwen: Your bath is ready your highness.. She looked at Clive..

Her: Forgive me Sire, i didn't realise that you were here..

Clive: Its okay Gwen.

Gwen: You will call me when you need something your highness.. Me: Okay Gwen and thank you

She started walking up to the door.. Clive: Gwen..

She stopped then turned around and looked at Clive..

Clive: Please stay with Flare, never leave her side especially when Princess Maxima is around...

Gwen: Yes Sire

I looked at Clive.. Me: What's wrong?

Clive: i just don't trust her Me: Why?

He looked at Gwen...

Me: You can be excused Gwen She bowed and Walked out...

Gwen: Ofcourse Your highness.

She walked out.. I looked at Clive. Him: Last night Maxima was standing right next to my bed.

Me: doing what?

Clive: Just starring at me, she was frozen.. Was more like she was possessed.. Me: What time was it?

Him: 2am or 3am I think.. Me: The witchful hour.. Him: Huh?

I looked at him..

Me: i think Maxima is possessed.. Him: Demon possessed?

Me: No by a spirit that seeks revenge.. Clive: still that is possession..

He stood up..

Me: Where you going?

Him: if you believe that she's possessed then exorcism must be performed.. I looked at him overwhelmed by a bit of excitement and shock..

Him: What?

Me: You believe me..

Him: She was standing next to my bed in the early hours of the morning.. That ain't normal. He then walked out.. I sat there trying to process what just happened..

Me: He believes me...

PART 63

[REVENGE]

Clive and i we were supposed to have a peaceful nice breakfast in our beautiful garden surrounded by Lillies, Orchards, and Roses. The table was set under the big tree. Everything was perfectly laid out by the house servants. Unfortunately that romantic breakfast came to an End when i ate Sausages and they came back out. I tried eating other foods such as fish fingers, scrambled eggs with cheese but everything came out, i vomited all of them out..

I was very nauseated, i was very dizzy and Clive was very worried. The only thing i could Process was cold water.. I was sitting on top of him with my hands around his neck, and my head laid on his shoulder with my legs spread at the sides of his chair.. He was running his hands on my back while kissing me on my neck....

Him: even now you don't feel like eating? Me: No...

All i wanted was to just sleep and him cuddling Me, that's all i wanted.. He kissed me on my neck again..

Him: You worrying me, are you sure that i shouldn't call the Doctor? Me: I'll be fine..

Him: You hardly ate anything babe, the only thing you processed was cold water.. Me: i just want you to hold me..

Him: I'm here..

If you pregnant and have your man going threw such with you, i swear you are blessed Same as i am...

Him: You have magic, why don't you use your magic and i will take this sickness away from you. Instead of you having it, I'll have it for you..

Me: You are soo sweet, but unfortunately I cannot use a spell for my own personal benefit...

Him: Why not?

Me: Because i am a witch and i need to save others than

myself. That's my purpose..

Him: What's gonna happen if you use magic for your own Personal gain? Me: There will be consequences...

Him: That's bad.. Me: i know..

He moved his hand down to my butt..

Him: Aren't you supposed to be wearing a dress or something? Can my baby even breath in there? This Jean feels too tight..

I giggled..

Me: Its not tight..

Him: i have never seen a Queen that wears Jeans..

I raised my head and faced him. Me: What you trying to say?

Him: Nothing Malady

Me: Better be nothing...Sophia bought me this Jean. He looked down, i probably shouldn't have said that.. Me: I'm sorry

Him: Its okay..

He then looked at me..

Him: You have the gift of seeing and communicating with the dead right? I nodded..

Him: Have you seen Sophia?

I didn't wanna bring up the fact that Sophia sacrificed her soul for me and the baby to be here, because then Clive might continue hating sorcery..

Me: No..

Him: Reason being?

Me: Sophia is at peace...i only communicate with dead people that need my help.. Him: That's good to hear..

We then heard someone clearing their throat.. I got off him and it was Maxima. She looked rather strange, she was wearing a green sarie with alot of bangles and an earring that was in her nose.. She looked very Indian...

I went and sat next to Clive, she looked at us.. Her: Good morning

We greeted her back, she then sat down..

Clive: I never knew that you were fascinated by the Indian culture? Me: Clive..

She looked at Clive.. Her: Clive..

The look that Maxima gave Clive was a very emotional look, i could even see tears forming in her eyes...

Her: So did name you Clive?

Clive was very dumbfounded by what was happening.. Her: Where is your twin?

Me: Sophia?

She looked at me, and tears fell.. Her: Sophia and Clive..

Clive looked at me, i didn't know what to say i just shrugged my shoulders.. She then wiped her tears..

Her: i am sorry...

She then looked at us and smiled.. Her: Are you two a couple?

Clive: Maxima.. Me: Yes we are..

Her: i can sense your love for each other.. She looked at Clive..

Her: marry her she is off good heart.. Clive: Okay Maxima what is going on?

She looked at Clive then tried to snap back to reality, but i could see right through her that she is not our Maxima..

Her: Forgive me.. I just.. I don't know what came over me.. I looked at Clive..

Me: Can you excuse us for a few minutes? Clive: Never!

Me: Malove please..

He looked at Maxima then after looked at me.. Him: i don't trust her with you...

I put my hand ontop of his.. Me: I'll be fine..

He looked at me for a while...

Him: Okay, but i won't go far I'll just stand at a far distance from yall.. Me: Its okay

He kissed me.. Him: i love you Me: i love you too

He looked at Maxima and stood up, he then walked to stand a far distance from us....

I looked at Maxima..

Her: He truly cares about you that he would guard you to make sure that i won't hurt you..

I looked at her..

Me: Are you going to hurt me?

She smiled, while pouring herself some tea.. Her: Want some tea darling?

Me: No..

Her: i love tea, especially camomile.. Me: cut the small talk, who are you? She looked at Clive..

Her: He has grown..

Me: Why do you wanna hurt my fiance?

She looked at me as if like i said something inappropriate..

Her: i will never hurt my son!

At that instant everything moved slow, my mind froze.. I looked at her while laughing a little..

Me: For a moment there i thought you referred to Clive as your son? Her: He is my son!

I looked at her, and she wasn't joking... Me: Okay who are you?

She drank her tea, then put down the cup.. Her: I am the Queen of Callanine..

Me: What?

Her: Flare i am here to seek revenge, please don't stand in my way.. Me: The Queen of Callanine is victoria..

Her: I am the Queen of Callanine, she murdered me then took my twins and raised them as her own..

I was very confused..

Her: You are my son's soon to be wife, you are the mother of my Grandson. Stay out of my way i don't wanna hurt you.. Let me have my revenge on the Queen..

PART 64

We were now walking around the garden, Clive was slowly following us he really wanted to make sure that “Maxima” doesn’t hurt me..

I looked at her.

Me: So what is your name, because i cannot keep on referring to you as Maxima while you not..

She smiled, this woman has the warmest smile.. Her: Basheeba..

Me: And you are Clive’s mother?

She stopped then turned around and looked at him. Her: i gave birth to my twins.

Me: i am not really getting the hang of your story..

Her: i am from a royal family, I am of Royalty and i was married to my Edward white the King of Callanine. I look at you and Clive, you guys remind me of the love that Edward and myself used to share..

Me: Then how did Queen Victoria come about?

Her: You know how husbands are. He started having an affair with Victoria and Victoria was my ward at that time..

Me: So wait?? Queen Victoria is not Royalty? Her: Not at all. She was just a mere servant..

I was very very shocked by that, i mean Queen Victoria has always been giving me hell about not marrying Clive because I’m not Royalty while she’s not Royalty too.. Her: When i learned about their affair, i told myself that i wasn’t gonna loose my husband to a servant. It was too embarrassing, it was too degrading. I was gonna be a laughing stock of this whole Town if that ever came out. The Queen loosing her husband to a servant..

Me: That does sound embarrassing, so what happened next? We stopped next to the roses, she picked one up and started smelling it....

Her: i grew all this roses here. This garden was my only

escape when i was in pain.. She smelled it again then looked at it for a while, just admiring it... She then looked at me.

Her: Ohw Forgive me dear, we still on the story.. We continued walking.

Her: i let him take Victoria as his second wife. I welcomed her in our house, this house..

Me: What went wrong?

Her: Jealousy, greed.. She wanted everything to be hers.

When i found out that i was pregnant with twins, my husband loved me more. He came back to his senses and wanted us to be a happy couple again, he didn't want Victoria anymore.. After giving birth to my twins, we were gonna name them Clive and Sophia of which he did..

Me: How did she kill you? Her: She poisoned me..

I swear it was very hard to process all that i was being told.. I have known the Queen to be evil, but i have never known her to be this evil.. We stopped again, and she put her hand on my cheek..

Her: You such a sweet beautiful young woman, i just hope that my son knows how blessed he is to have you. You are of pure heart Flare..

I then heard Clive clearing his throat behind me, i turned around and looked at him.. Basheeba: i will walk around the garden admiring my beautiful flowers..

She then started walking away from us. Clive gently rubbed my cheek.. Him: thought I told you to call me when she starts Acting strange..

Me: She didn't hurt me, she's harmless... Him: So Maxima is really possessed?

I nodded my head yes..

Him: Then we must get father Uther to perform an exorcism

Me: No Clive..

Him: Flare it's for the greater good.. What if Maxima harms one of us?

How do i convince Clive that Basheeba Is harmless, she is just here to take care of business and then go..

I was now sitting at the living room eating roasted chicken. It has become one of my obsessions, something i cannot go a day without... Naomi came in as i was getting my hands and mouth greasy..

Her: Have mercy on the poor chicken Me: I'm trying too.
She sat down.

Me: i was gonna share with you but.. She raised her hand up..

Her: I'm fine thank you. I continued eating..

Me: Maxima Is possessed

Her: i have noticed that.. So who is the ghost? Me: Clive's biological mother, Queen Basheeba.. She didn't seem shocked by that.

Me: You not surprised?

Her: i have known about Queen Basheeba but i didn't know she was Clive's mother.. Me: Well she is, our current Queen killed her..

Naomi: That's drastic

Me: she's here to get revenge and kill the Queen... Her: and that doesn't worry you?

Me: i can't fight off a ghost

Her: If this comes out and Clive learns about what's happening, it's going to kill him.. Queen victoria is the only Family that he has..

Naomi has a point there, but even if i wanted to stop Queen Basheeba i won't even know where to start....

Naomi: We will have to consult the book of spells, I'm sure there's a spell to drive her out of Maxima's body..

Voice: You will not get rid of me that easily..

I turned over and saw Queen Basheeba standing at the doorway.. Naomi: We will not let you hurt the Queen..

Basheeba: No one can stand in my way, not even you

Naomi..

She looked at Naomi, and Naomi started screaming with her hands covering her eyes and i noticed that she was actually bleeding from her eyes..

Me: What are you doing to her? I went over to Naomi..

Naomi: My eyes are burning!!

Me: Stop it Basheeba you hurting her!

Basheeba: that will teach her not to stand in my way..

Basheeba means business, staying out of her way is what needs to be done..

PART 65

[THE TRUTH SHALL SET YOU FREE]

We were all gathered at Naomi's room. The Doctor was busy checking up on her, making sure that no severe damage was caused to her eyes. She could still see, but her eyes were a bit reddish and sensitive to light..

Queen. V: Well doctor?

The doctor put back that little light in the pocket of his white coat.. Doc: This is something I have never see in my line of work before...

Clive: So you telling us that there's no logical explanation to what caused the bleeding from her eyes?

Doc: That is what I am saying Sire..

Queen. V: Alot of unexplainable things are happening in this house,it was like this to my husband, then my daughter Sophia, then Flare, and now it's Naomi...

I looked at her as she referred to Sophia "Being her Daughter" the nerve of this woman truly surprises me sometimes....

Me: i think i need some fresh air Clive looked at me.

Him: Are you alright?

I looked at the Queen, i couldn't stand being in the same room as her anymore.. Me: Yes, just feeling a bit nauseated..

Him: Okay, call me when you not feeling good.. He kissed me on my forehead.

Him: i love you Me: i love you too

I then made my way out..

I went to the garden, the only place where i knew that i would find Queen Basheeba.. She was busy picking a few flowers, and i made my way to her..

Me: You almost killed Naomi

Her: i cannot kill Naomi, she's a Guardian only black magic from a black Guardian can kill her..

Me: You seem to know alot about sorcery.. She looked at

me.

Her: Child i have lived in this town for a long time to know alot about sorcery... She put a few roses in that basket that she was carrying..

Her: How is Naomi holding up? Me: She will survive i guess..

Her: Yes she will..

All of a sudden, while i was standing i felt some tingling sensation and a bit of an uncomfortable in my tummy. I tried to ignore it, but it got a bit tense..

Me: Owwww

She looked at me. Her: What's wrong?

I took her hand and put it on my tummy..

Her: Wow the baby is kicking, that is a strong kick.. Me: i never knew that they can kick this much.. Her: shows that it's a boy.

Me: Well i am hoping for a girl.. Her: How far along are you darling?

Me: Think I'm going to 5 months now..

Her: The bond that a mother shares with their unborn baby cannot be explained in words..

Me: i never really knew that you can love a human that is not born yet this much.. Her: i felt the same way when i was carrying my.. My twins.

The sudden change of her facial expression alerted me that this was a hard thing to talk about..

Me: I'm sorry

Her: Its not your fault darling. Me: How are you gonna kill her? She looked at me..

Her: i am not going to kill her..

She went back to picking up the roses. Me: i don't understand.

Her: Killing her would be very easy, i want to make her suffer the same way she made me suffer..

Me: in what way?

Her: i want her to confess everything to Clive. My eyes popped out of my sockets..

Me: No you cannot do this, please don't involve Clive in this it's gonna break him.. Her: i am sorry Flare but Clive deserves to know the truth.

Me: Do you wanna hurt Clive like that? Her: He has to know the truth Flare.

I then saw Queen Victoria making her way to us of which it made Queen Basheeba to be uneasy.

Victoria: Such a beautiful day isn't it? Me: It is your highness Basheeba stood there and looked at her, i could sense the rage that was building inside of her. Queen victoria looked at her..

Victoria: Maxima you been acting very strange lately.. She then looked at Maxima from head to toe. Victoria: Where did you get that Sarie from?

Queen Basheeba looked at her with tears forming in her eyes.. Victoria: Maxima i asked you a question, where did you get that Sarie? Tears fell from Her face..

Basheeba: Confess.

Queen Victoria looked at her with a confused facial expression.. Victoria: Excuse me?

Basheeba: Tell Clive the Truth...tell him what you did to me!!

Queen Victoria looked at her, and then realised that It was Queen Basheeba.. Victoria: No it cannot be..

She started moving backwards with her hand on her chest as if like she's going to have a heart attack..

Victoria: i.. I...i kill..

She looked like she was gonna faint right there.. Me: Your highness are you alright?

Victoria: Seize her!!.. Flare tell the Guards to seize her!! She then fell, and Basheeba came closer to her...

Basheeba: Your conscious is troubling you!! Confess! Tell the Truth because the truth shall set you free..

Queen Victoria was on the ground trying to catch her
breath... Victoria: Ple.. Pl.. Please stop!
I went and knelt next to her, she held on to my hand tight..
Victoria: Help.. H.. Help me Flare..
I didn't know what to do at that instant.

PART 66

[TAKE HEART]

“Dear God you ain’t done took soo many of my people, and I’m just wondering why you ain’t take my life. Like what the hell am i doing right]

Those are the words he kept on repeating from that song. He was sitting in his own personal space, that mini cinema of his with a big screen busy watching different music videos that spoke to his pain. Clive was taking what happened to Queen Victoria very hard.. After Queen Victoria fainted i went and called for help, then she was taken to the hospital off which she was said to have suffered a minor stroke.. Ever since we came back from the hospital, Clive has been sitting in his cinema playing music videos very loud and just shut the whole world out..

I was standing at the doorway with Queen Basheeba and we were looking at him, none of us had the strength to go to him...

He then turned the volume down and buried his face in his hands more as if like saying “im giving in, God take my life too” his back was facing us he didn’t notice us standing there.. Seeing him in that state killed me, seeing him hurting like that hurt me too and it was hurting Queen Basheeba too..

She looked at me, and i looked at her then after we looked at him..

I wanted him to know that i too, feel his pain. I wanted him to know that I know how it feels to lose those that you love. I have lost all my family, I’ve lost my mother and I have lost Zoe too. So i know the pain his going through.. I looked at him and just did the first thing that came to my mind and heart. If music is the only language he understands right now, then i will use that Same tactic to make him know that i

understand what his going through. I took a deep breath and just started singing.. Me: "somebody told me once that pain is a game we all gotta play, but why am in overtime with sudden death every other day.. I know that for the good of life there's a price we all gotta pay, but I'll pay until I'm poor and i still don't know what it is to have a good day... "

He turned around and looked at us. I am not much of a good singer nor am i a bad singer.. Basheeba looked at me and then looked at him...

Him: What are you guys doing here?

Basheeba looked at me again, then took a deep breath and looked at Clive.. Basheeba: Clive i need to tell you something..

I knew where this is going.. Me: Please no, don't do this..

Her: i need to do this, before Maxima wakes up. He needs to know the truth so i can move on whether he believes me or not it will be up to him..

I didn't want her to do this, especially not now that Clive is going through something like this..

She went to him and handed him a picture, Clive took it and looked at it.. Basheeba: What do you see?

Clive: i see What looks like my parents. That's definitely my father i can tell, but the woman holding the babies doesn't look like my mother..

My heart was beating very fast as I was standing there.. Clive looked at Basheeba. Clive: Maxima what is going on?

I saw tears again forming in her eyes...

Her: i am not Princess Maxima.. Well this is her body but i had borrowed it for a while.

Clive: i am confused, what's going on? He looked at me..

Him: Flare what is going?

I know that there wasn't any turning back right now.. I felt myself being overwhelmed by sadness that i too, couldn't stop the tears..

Me: The..

My voice was breaking, i cleared my throat..

Me: Maxima Is possessed by the spirit of Queen Basheeba.

She was the Queen of Callanine before she was killed..

I saw shock written all over his face.. Him: What?

We didn't know what to say..

Clive: my father once told me that he was married to Queen Basheeba.. Me: That is her, or rather her spirit..

Clive looked at her, he then shook his head no.. Clive: No..

No.. No..

Basheeba: Listen..

Queen Basheeba was now crying..

Clive: Ghosts don't exist. Maxima can be possessed Yes, but only by a demon and not a ghost. I do try to believe in demon possession because even the Bible is the evidence that it exists..

Me: My love..

Him: Flare please, there is no Ghost possession so what both of you are telling me now is alot of nonsense!

He stood up and started walking to the door.. Basheeba: i am your mother Clive!

He stopped then turned around and looked at her.. Clive: What did you just say?

She put both her hands on her mouth while crying.. Me:

That's her in the picture

He looked at the picture again..

Me: Queen Victoria and her married your dad. After giving birth to you and Princess Sophia, Queen Victoria poisoned her out of jealousy so she can take over..

Clive was a bit indential about what we just confessed to him.

He looked at me... Him: Are you in on this too?

Me: Its the truth, Queen Victoria suffered from the minor stroke because Basheeba was telling her to confess...

Clive: Shut up! Shut up!

He said that with his index finger pointing at me, he was very angry.. Him: Is this about me finding it hard to accept that you a witch? Basheeba: Clive pl..

He walked over to her...

Him: You just shu.. Shut up you hear me? Shut the hell up!!
He then turned and looked at me.

Him: Why you doing this?

I didn't know what to say, i was crying and Shaking.. Him: Do you have any idea how much i love you?

Me: i love you too..

I mumbled those words under my breaking voice..

He looked at me, and this time i saw tears in his eyes.. He was hurt, he was breaking..

Basheeba: Its not her fault, she didn't want you finding out about this, Flare loves you she didn't want you to get hurt..

Whatever Basheeba said was falling on deaf ears because he was fully focused on me..

Him: You and your sorcery tried to kill my mother?! I shook my head no,while crying...

Him: i never wanna see you ever again Flare!!

Tears were now falling from his eyes, his lips were Shaking..

Him: Go Flare!!!

Yes he was saying that out of pain and anger, but deep down he didn't mean it.. I went down on my knees..

Me: Clive please..

Him: i am banishing you from Callanine!!.. Go.. Leave! He was crying, i was crying..

Me: Clive please don't hurt me.. You hurting me..

He was hurting me, my heart was breaking into a million pieces..

As i was crying my lungs i saw him slowly stepping back together with Basheeba like they were seeing something that scared them..

I slowly turned around and i couldn't believe my eyes. I saw

this girl standing behind me.. Her face had a bit of Zoe's features but i wasn't sure who she was, i wasn't sure about her because she was a bit old to be Zoe...

She started screaming and a dragon flame formed behind her, i crawled backwards...

She looked at me

Her: Flare get out i don't wanna hurt you!!

She looked at Clive, her eyes were flashing flames.. Shit was about to get real.

PART 67

[FAMILY FIRST]

I slowly opened my eyes and i noticed that i wasn't in the Royal house. I was actually at my home.

I looked beside Me, and Zoe was starring at me.. Me: Zoe?

She smiled at me. Her: Welcome back..

I sat up straight with my back leaning against the head board of the bed... She put pillows behind me to support my back..

Her: There you go I looked at her. Me: Look at you..

Her: What not you expected huh?

Me: I'm just shocked, i mean not long ago you were my little sister and now you almost my age..

She chuckled.

Her: Its amazing how fate decides to plan your future... I put my hand on her cheek.

Me: You look beautiful

Her: it runs in the family i guess.. Me: i guess so

Her: And you didn't tell me that i am going to be an Aunt soon.. She said that while putting her hand on my tummy..

Me: Well if you were around, i would've told you. She looked down.

Her: Ya, but my being here is very dangerous.. Me: Did you hurt him?

Her: No i didn't.

Me: Thank you for not hurting him.

Her: But he must be careful because next time i won't be so considerate.. Me: So you came because of Me?

Her: i came because i felt your pain. We are the Versini witches we always feel each other's pain no matter how far we are from each other..

Me: Thank you for being here. She smiled at me..

Her: in the spirit of family, there's a few people who wanna see you Me: Who?

She stood up and went to open the door. Zoe: You can come in..

I couldn't believe who walked in through that door, it was my mother.. Me: Mama?

She stood there and smiled at me. She still had that beautiful smile of hers that reflected her good heart..

Her: Flare..

She opened her arms, and i got out of bed and went to hug her.. I couldn't stop the tears, it felt good being in her arms one more time, it felt good feeling her love one more time. We broke the hug, and i noticed that she was crying too..

Me: How is this possible? She wiped my tears..

Mom: We witches, everything is possible with the book of spells... Zoe: but we won't have her forever, we only have her for 2 days.. She smiled at me through those tears..

Mom: Its good to see you Me: Its good to see you too Zoe: and that's not all.. She looked at mom..

Zoe: Should i bring her in? Mom: Ofcourse..

Me: Bring in who?

Zoe: i present to you the Great Mishaka Versini.

Mishaka walked In, she looked beautiful exactly the same way that she looked wheni saw her in the future..

Me: Wow, i can't believe this..

I went up to hug her but she stopped me.. Mishaka: What are you doing?

Me: i..

Her: No keep your hands to yourself child!

She then walked around the room while looking at it. I looked at Zoe, and she shrugged her shoulders..

My mother looked at me... Mom: Are you??

Me: Am i??

She looked at my tummy.. I nodded my head yes, and she came to me..

Her: Wow i never thought this day would come.. You finally

started a relationship with Charlie?

Me: Uhm..

Mishaka: How you wish.. She's about to marry that arrogant Prince Clive. My mother was beyond shocked.

Mom: Prince Clive as in like? Me: Yes..

Mom: Flare no..

Me: He is not as bad as you think he is Mama. Mom: You and Clive cannot be my Angel..

Me: He has accepted sorcery, he is not like his father.. She shook her head no..

Zoe: Flare is right.. He is not bad..

Mishaka: Listen to Your mother child! You and him cannot be. Me: Why?

Mishaka: Because alot of people will get hurt. Me: But i love him

My mother put her hand on my cheek.. Her: Ohh my Angel i wish i told you sooner Me: Told me what?

Mishaka: Victoria is not gonna give you and Clive peace, her rage will make her pursue you and Clive until she kills you.. They were not making sense at all, why would Queen Victoria do that?

PART 68

I didn't quite understand what my mom and Mishaka were telling me. So at that instant, they sat me down to explain everything..

Me: Is victoria a Witch? Mishaka: She wishes! (annoyed)

Me: Then what are you telling me?

Mishaka: i can just sense her fury. She is gonna join forces with Dark witches to practice black magic so she could hurt you and Clive the same way that she's hurt.. Me: How is she hurt?

Mom: that we don't know. We don't know what caused her pain.. Me: has to be the Basheeba saga, i can't think of anything else.. Mom: Could be..

Mishaka: that is why you need to stay away from Clive..

I shook my head no, my mom extended her hand to hold mine..

Her: Sweetheart you are a witch with the least powers to protect yourself. We cannot always be here on time to save you...

Mishaka: the only power you possess is your powerful scream, which is very useless against black magic...

Mom: Black magic is very powerful. Me: i will not leave Clive

Mishaka: He has hurt you already!

Zoe: He banished her from Callanine too. Me: He was angry!

Mishaka: Child listen to me..

Me: No!!! (yelling).. You listen to me!.. My tone of voice surprised her. Mishaka looked at my mom.

Mishaka: be a mother to her please and teach her respect..

Mom: Flare..

Me: i understand what all of you are saying but, i love Clive and i am not going to leave him.. You are my family you supposed to support me..

Zoe: We do support you...Me: No you don't! (yelling)

Mishaka: i am telling you rose be a mother!

Mom: i am handling this.. Sorry sweetheart we didn't mean to upset you.. I stood up..

Mom: Where are you going?

Me: i just need to lie down a little.

I walked up to the bedroom, and banged the door behind me then i went and threw myself on the bed.. I was very hurt, yes i know Clive is arrogant, i know he has pride, i know he is full of himself. But underneath all that he is a good person and he loves me.. I know that Deep down he does love me. I feel like it's very wrong to keep two people apart, especially when those people love each other and that is what's happening here...

.

I was crying while starring at the wall and thinking about Clive until a knock disturbed me..

Me: Come in..

My mom opened the door and Walked in.. Her: Can i talk to you?

I sat up straight then she came and sat next to me..

Her: We love you soo much Flare and the last thing we wanna do is hurt you.. I didn't say anything.

Her: We not trying to keep you away from him, we just worried about your safety and you getting hurt.. Yes Zoe and Mishaka are always gonna be there to protect you but what if some day they show up and it's too late?

I understand her concerns. I am about to be a mother soon and i will always make sure that i protect my child..

Me: i wish that i didn't feel how i feel about Clive. I love him mama and i don't see myself leaving him. Yes he can be too much sometimes but deep down i love him.. She held my hand.

Her: I just want you to be happy. Me: And he makes me happy.. She smiled at me..

Her: Then Im happy..

Zoe walked in as i was having a heart to heart with my mom..

Zoe: Someone Is here to see you..

Me: Let them in..

Naomi showed up behind Zoe, her eyes looked fine now.

Me: Naomi..

She came to hug me..

Me: Look at you, you look better She sat down..

Her: Its good to see your whole family,although Mishaka is being herself as always.. Zoe: rude as always..

Naomi: How did you manage to bring them to the world of the living?

Zoe: i had to cheat the black widow by using a powerful spell to bring their souls here.

Naomi: You used a spell for your own Personal gain? You know not to do that.. Zoe: Well consider it as me helping someone. Flare needed to see us all one more time, so she knows that we are her family and we will always be here for her..

Naomi: the Versini witches were indeed blessed with pure and gentle hearts.. Except for you know who.

We all laughed when she said that.. Me: Mishaka is good in her own way.. Mom: She is indeed..

Naomi: this is not a social visit unfortunately... Me: did something happen at the Royal? Naomi: Well..

She looked at my mother and Zoe.. Mom: Let's give them some space.

My mom and Zoe went out, i then looked at Naomi.. Naomi: The Truth came out..

Me: What truth?

Naomi: Queen Victoria confessed everything to Clive, and he is not taking it too well..

I was very surprised, i never thought that Victoria can will actually confess.. Me: So Queen Basheeba finally got justice..

Naomi: Yes, after the confession Queen Basheeba left Maxima's body.. Me: So our Maxima is back?

Her: Yes she is..

Me: How is Queen Victoria handling everything? I mean she should be proud of herself at least there's one good deed that she did...

Her: She's not handling everything very well.. She's still at the hospital but gonna be discharged soon, and Clive doesn't want anything to do with her. He banished her from Callanine too..

Clive and banishing..

Me: i think that, this is the fury that my mother and Mishaka were telling me about.. Naomi: Queen Victoria is gonna seek revenge in the most deadliest way ever because..

Me: Because?

She looked down and didn't say anything.. Me: Naomi?

Her: Queen Victoria put 2 and 2 Together. She is suspecting that you are a witch, and is saying that you the one who brought Basheeba's soul back so she can seek revenge..

Me: Wow!! So that's why she wanna come at me?

Naomi nodded her head.. Me: i don't believe this!

Naomi: You need to see Clive, he is broken. Loosing Sophia, Then having to find out what he found out, and you not being there is killing him...

I can just imagine the pain that he is going through..

A few days passed, my mom and Mishaka were not around anymore i was only left with Zoe who didn't wanna Leave me alone just as yet..

I haven't seen or spoken to Clive ever since, i do wanna visit him, i do wanna see how his holding up but I don't want what happened that day to happen again...

I was sitting on the couch busy starring at a picture of us that i didn't see Zoe standing in the doorway....

Zoe: Go talk to him already.. She came and sat down.. Me: i

don't know Zoe..

Her: i can see that you miss him, I'm sure he misses you too..
He needs you especially at a time like this..

Zoe is right, I cannot abandon Clive when he needs me the most..

I went and bathe, then just put on a simple outfit being my long summer dress and sandals. I really had to look good though because we haven't seen each other in a while, and then i made my way to the Royal house..

I got to the Royal house, and Naomi wasn't lying. Clive was a wreck. There was too much bottles of whisky, it looked like he had been drinking everyday. The house was clean though, thanks to the house keepers or all else it was gonna look like a pig sty.....

I looked for him, and he was standing at the balcony..

I slowly walked up to him with my knees Shaking and my heart beating fast i was nervous..

Me: Cl..Clive..

He turned around and looked at me. Seeing him in that state really did things to me. He looked like he hasn't slept in a while, the shirt he was wearing was dirty had stains..

He truly was broken, i have never seen him like this before...

Our eyes locked, it was that moment you see in the movies where two lovers are reunited again and a love song will be playing. That is exactly what was happening, except for that a love song was playing in my head..

We couldn't stop the tears, was more as if like we were communicating with our emotions..

Him: Im.. I am very sorry..

His voice was breaking, he was running his hand on his hair..

Me: Its okay..

Him: Victoria.. She...

Me: We don't have to talk about it, Naomi told me.. Him:

She killed my mother.. She..

I walked up to him.. Me: i know

I laid my head on his chest and i could still smell alcohol in him..

Me: Its alright.. We gonna be alright.. As long as we have each other then we gonna be okay.

We were both crying, i could feel his pain and all i wanted is for him to transfer some of his pain to me..

But the question is, are we really gonna be okay?

PART 69

[LOVE SHALL SEE US THROUGH]

Clive was not getting better, he was drinking his pain away he didn't care about anything in life anymore. Was just him, his pain and his alcohol....

It was a beautiful Saturday morning, Maxima had accompanied me to the Doctor for my check up. I was relieved to hear that my baby was healthy especially after all the stress that i have been having lately. I was now 5months pregnant and it was a baby boy. The Doctor advised me that i need to eat healthy, exercise and drink my supplements one of them being folic acid, and my vitamin tablets. Other women get very big when they pregnant, but i wasn't too big and my bump too wasn't big...

After the appointment, Maxima and i met up with Charlie at some restaurant just to have breakfast together i really miss my friendship Charlie...

Him: You look good

He came and hugged me.

Me: You don't look too bad yourself. Him: Thank you

He looked at Maxima, she looked at him too and they were all smiling at each other.. Charlie: hi..

Maxima: hi..

Me: Agh get on with it already!

They laughed. He went closer to her and they shared a passionate kiss. I was happy for them,i was happy that Charlie has found himself the love of his life, but another part of me broke a little when i saw them sharing that moment. I miss that part of my life, and Clive doesn't look like he is ready to give us attention..

Charlie: Shall we go and eat? Me: Yes please, I'm starving..

We went and got ourselves a table.

I ordered chicken and chips, with 2 Portuguese rolls. Maxima

got herself a salad, while Charlie just got a mere pie...

Charlie: Are you sure that you going to finish that? Me:

Charlie I'm pregnant

He raised his hands up as a sign of surrendering.. Me: So you missed Zoe

He looked at me confused..

Me: She was here but went back to the Garden of Evil

Maxima: Zoe your little sister?

Me: Yes..

Maxima: What is the Garden of Evil?

I looked at her and remembered that she doesn't know about the witch part of me. I trust Maxima alot, i mean she hasn't given me any reason not to trust her..

Me: i..

Charlie: You don't have too Flare.

Me: i think i have too, i mean i trust Maxima to be quiet about this.. Maxima: quiet about?

I looked at her...

Me: i am a witch

She looked at me for a while, and then she laughed.. Her: Yea if you a witch then i am a mermaid..

She went back to her salad.

Her: i never knew that you can crack Jokes Flare..

I kept quiet until she looked at Charlie then looked at me and i saw shock written all over her face..

Maxima: You are a real witch?? (yelling)

I looked around and most people were looking at us now..

Me: Yey! let's get ontop of the table and tell everyone... She lowered her voice.

Her: You are a real witch? I nodded my head yes.. She looked at Charlie. Her: You also knew? Charlie: Yes

Maxima: Wow.. I thought that was just Fary tale Me: No

witches exist for real, mermaids don't.. Her: So do you like have a broom? Or a wand?

Me: No that's ancient. I just have a gift of communicating and seeing people who are no more

Her: Wow...

Me: There's good witches and bad witches.. Her: You a good witch right?

Me: Ofcourse

Her: That wasn't hard to guess Me: And Naomi is my Guardian Her: Guardian?

Me: every witch needs a Guardian to guard and protect them.. Bad witches also have bad Guardians.

Maxima: Wow this is just wow..

Me: You'll get used to it.. But please don't tell anyone about this Her: My lips are sealed..

She looked at me with her eyes wide open..

Her: Clive! If he finds out you dead.. No we can't let him find out sister... Me: That's sweet of you sister but he knows

Her: And he hasn't killed you? Me: No..

Her: Talk about true love..

Charlie: Speaking of that arrogant chap where is he? That's a topic i really didn't wanna engage in... Maxima: His heavy with the bottles

Charlie sent out a side smile.. Charlie: His an alcoholic now?

Me: No!.. His just going through a hard time. Charlie: But still..

Me: Who judged you when you were heavy on the bottles because your dead friend was Haunting you?

Him: i..

I stood up..

Me: Think I'm gonna go now..

I started walking, and before reaching the door i felt someone grabbing me by my arm.. I turned around and it was Charlie, he pulled Me closer and hugged me.

I couldn't help but cry.

Me: i don't know what to do anymore Charlie.. Him:

Shhhhh..

Me: Clive keeps on hurting me..

Him: i swear I'm gonna kill him for hurting you like this.. I heard someone clearing their throat..

Maxima: Flare please don't steal my boyfriend We broke the hug.. Charlie squeezed her cheek.

Charlie: Don't worry i don't see Flare that way.. I have always seen her as a sister. She put her hands around his waist..

Him: Then that's good

They shared a kiss again, while i wiped my tears..

After spending some time with Charlie, Maxima and i went back to the house... We got there and Clive was in his drunk state as always. He was half way with that bottle of cognac. He looked as if like he woke up and just remembered alcohol.. Me: Clive..

He looked at us..

Me: i went to the Doctor with Maxima today. I handed him the pic.

Me: our son is healthy.

He looked at it for a while.. Him: Im going to have a son Me: Yes it's a boy..

He continued looking at that pic, then put it down after a while and went for his glass..

Maxima: Would be nice if you could go with Flare next time

Him: i will

Maxima and i looked at each other as he gulped down that whisky.. Maxima: I feel sorry for your unborn son..

He looked at her...

Him: What the fuck did you just say?

Her: Having a father who cares about nothing but alcohol really is sad!

Clive: Funny how you talk about my son like that when you won't even give me one! Me: Clive..

Him: What? It's not a secret that she's a barren! No man will ever love you Maxima, you useless i am even doing you a favour!

That really broke Maxima.. Her: Wow..

She started walking away.. Me: Maxima..

She ignored me and went out, i turned to Clive as he was pouring whisky into his glass..

I didn't say anything i just looked at him.. Him: Don't look at me like that..

Me: Is this how our life is going to be from now on? I had tears streaming down my cheeks..

Him: Flare..

Me: i do feel sorry for our son..

He stood up and came to me, he was upset because of that statement.. Him: So you also saying that i am going to be a bad father?

Me: Yes!!

Him: Then you should've kept your legs closed!

I slapped him.. He looked at me just couldn't believe that i did that.. I slapped him again and again until he held my hand. His cheek was even red..

Him: Stop woman!!! (shouting)

He was holding my wrist very tight. Me: i hate you!!

Him: No you don't..

Me: Yes i do!!! Yes i do!! Yes i do!!.

He pulled Me closer and shut me up with a kiss.. That was good i won't lie.. Him: i love you

Me: i still hate you!

He ran his hands under my tshirt and started squeezing my breasts while kissing me. I wanted him, i wanted all of him...

Before i knew it i was sitting on top of the table with him taking my tshirt off.... Him: i missed you

Me: missed you too

PART 70

[WHAT YOU CAN'T SEE, CANNOT HURT YOU]

I am standing there watching him sleeping peacefully. I had taken a warm relaxing bath hoping it will take the soreness from my Vagina. We had quite 3 crazy rounds before he passed out on me. I was glad he passed out because I was tired, i couldn't keep up anymore. At least we had our last round in his bedroom of which my son couldn't stop kicking, probably signaling that enough is enough..

He is protective over his mom while he is still in my tummy, what more when his born. I had came to realise that i love Clive with all my heart and i just wish that he could go back to being my old Clive, i just want things to go back to how they used to be before the Victoria saga... I am a Witch and i can write my own spell that can make him forget about the pain that he is feeling, but then i am not gonna use magic to change Clive. I want him to change on his own..

I went to my bedroom and put on a dress, with flops. As much as I love pants but now i cannot wear them anymore.. I then walked downstairs and to my surprise all the house servants were running up and down like headless chickens..

Me: What's going on?

No one seemed to be attending to my question.. Me: Gwen!

She quickly came to me.. Her: Yes your highness? Me:

What's going on?

Her: We just received news that Queen White is coming. Queen white being Clive's Great Grandmother from his father's side..

Me: i didn't know that Clive's Great Grandmother is still alive..

I saw Maxima coming down the stairs. Her eyes were Red which showed that she was crying..

Maxima: What's going on?

Me: Apparently Clive's Great Grandmother is coming

Maxima: Queen white?

Me: Yes, do you know her? She shook her head..

Her: i have only been told about her by my father.. Me:

When is she coming Gwen?

Gwen: Tomorrow your highness

Me: uhm so what's with the cleaning?

Gwen: Your highness Queen white is very fussy, she wants everything spotless Maxima: Then you should go back to cleaning..

Gwen: Yes your highness..

She bowed and went back to what she was doing.. I looked at Maxima and then hugged her.

Me: How are you feeling?

She shrugged her shoulders...

Her: i will be fine it's not like what he said wasn't true...

Me: But he had no right to throw it back in your face like that.. Maxima: Well Clive has been a jerk

We both laughed at that.. As we were standing there we felt something like a cold breeze passing us.. Whatever passed us was very quick that our dresses flipped. It was weird because if it was a ghost i would've seen it but whatever it was it was invincible..

Maxima: You felt that didn't you? Please tell me you felt that? Me: Ofcause i did..

Her: is it a ghost? What is it? Me: Search me..

Whatever that was, it was something that i have never had an experience with In my whole life..

Clive woke up later, with a bad hangover. I prepared him a bath hopefully that will work a little..

I was sitting on his bed as he came out of the bathroom with

a towel wrapped around his torso.. He had his hand on his forehead.

Him: Im dying babe..

Me: You need to stop drinking like a fish.. He looked at me..

Him: Are you calling me a fish? Me: Uhm yes...

He walked up to me...

Him: Woman do you know who i am? Me: question is do you know who i am?

He gently pushed me back and my head landed on the pillow, while he came ontop of me and pinning my hands on the bed.. He kissed me.

Him: i demand respect!

Me: You earn respect you don't demand respect.. He kissed me again..

Him: i have a dream that one day my wife will give me the respect that i deserve.. I laughed..

Me: Never knew you can imitate Martin Luther king.. Him: i can imitate anyone

I laughed. He then looked deep in my eyes..

Him: i love you and thank you for not giving up on me.. Me: Does that mean my old Clive is back?

Him: Ya i don't think i can take this hangover.. Me: Can i throw away all the whiskies?

Him: Don't test me woman... He got off me..

Me: i knew it, you just fronting..

Him: i will drink now and then, but i won't make drinking a habit.. Me: Promise?

Him: i promise

Him: Let me get dressed so we can go out..

He started walking to his closet but then stumbled on something. Was more as if like he bumped into someone and was pushed off the way because something slightly pushed him and he took about 3 steps backwards...he looked at me all shocked. Him: Did you see that?

I nodded my head yes..

Him: i swear there's someone standing in my way... Me: Yes i saw that

He walked to his closet again.

I looked around the room trying to make sense of what was happening, but all i could see was a shadow of a human figure on the wall..

Me: Who are you? What do you want?

There was silence. I then felt something rushing to Me and it pushed me to the bed and pinned me down that i couldn't move Same way that Clive pinned me. Whatever this thing was, it was heavy on me.. I felt it touching my thigh as my dress was slightly lifted up and my legs parted..

It made its way to touching my breasts, i couldn't fight whatever it was it started talking exactly in Clive's voice..

Voice: "I have a dream that my wife will one day give me the respect that i deserve" I couldn't see it..

Me: Who are you?

That's the only words i remember saying before i passed out..

I heard someone busy calling my name and gently Shaking me.. "Flare wake up".

I slowly opened my eyes and it was Clive... Him: What's wrong?

I noticed that my underwear was now hanging on my thighs, he looked at me..... Him: Were you playing with yourself?

Me: No i don't do that...

I got up and lifted my underwear up, there was no sign that i was sexually Violated because the little burning sensation was still from when i had sex with Clive. The only awkward thing was bite marks on my breasts and neck..

Clive: Wtf? Who did this to you?

I looked at him, there's no point in lying to him especially because he knows who i am...

Me: i think we... An unknown entity that cannot be seen has invaded the palace... Clive: Demon?

Me: i am not sure

Him: Then how do we fight it?

Me: have to consult Naomi and The book of spells.. Him:

Let's go then, are you sure that you okay? Me: Yes..

We started walking and i felt something holding me back. It was breathing heavy that's all we could hear, it breathing down my neck..

Me: uhm Clive..

It started pulling me by my hair.. Clive: Flare..

Before i knew it I'm on the floor and this thing is dragging me by my hair across the floor..

Me: Clive!!!!!!

Him: Flare!!!!

He makes his way to me and whatever this thing is it let's me go. We see the door opening and closing...

Clive comes to me.. Him: Are you okay?

I feel this Terrible pain in my tummy.. Me: My baby!!!

Him: What's happening are you feeling pain? The pain is so excruciating that i can't keep up.. Me: ahhhh Clive!!!

I am screaming and crying.. He picks me up.. Him: Im taking you to the hospital..

I feel that I'm wet down there, i thought that i had pissed on myself but in actual fact i am bleeding. I am scared, i am crying as Clive rushes down the stairs while screaming Naomi's name..

Me: Please save my son Clive.. Save my son!!

PART 71

I slowly opened my eyes and my vision was a bit blurry. I could hear something beeping, i could feel the IV running through my vein. The soreness of that long needle cannot make you not to notice it..

I blinked alot trying to make everything appear more visible. I then saw Clive sitting next to me on that chair and holding my hand, he looked like he had passed out.. Me: Cli..Cli...

I shook his hand until he woke up and he looked at me.. Him: Malady you awake..

Me: wha... I.. The..

I remember being dragged across the floor by something that i couldn't see with my naked eye, i remember Clive picking me up. I remember bleeding and crying, i remember being scared of losing my baby boy...

Me: My.. Our.. So..

He put his hand on my shoulder.. Him: Shhhhh he Is fine..

He took my hand and put it on my tummy. I could feel the bump, my son was Still alive, he was still inside of me..

Clive smiled at me..

Him: He is strong like his mother..

I won't lie that was a relief knowing that i still have my son still attached to me gave me hope. I wanted to stay awake, i wanted to talk to Clive but i couldn't keep my eyes open. I was too tired, too drained, too weak, too dizzy, and too sleepy..

Clive: Shhhhh Malady get some rest..

I slowly closed my eyes and immediately entered the dream world..

Later i opened my eyes and i was a bit better than before. I was regaining my strength and everything was coming back. Although i was a bit dysfunctional, but i was better than before..

Clive was still next to me looked like he never left my sight, and Naomi was there Together with Maxima..

Me: Family..

They all looked at me, Clive came and held my hand.. Clive: How are you feeling now?

Me: a bit better

I noticed that i was having a blood transfusion.. I looked at them Me: Who donated their blood?

Maxima cleared her Throat.. Her: That would be me..

Clive: Maxima was a match to you and she didn't hesitate to donate.. I looked at her.

Me: You shouldn't have

Maxima: i wanted too.. You my sister although not by blood but i love you Flare and i couldn't lose you..

Maxima was really making me emotional,who said family is by blood only? No even strangers can be family to you..

Clive: Don't you wanna sit down Maxima? Maxima: i ate after donating so I'll be fine for now.. Clive: Just tell me when you not feeling well.. Maxima: Yes Sire..

It was good to see them getting along. It's true what they say, those who have been hurt alot have big hearts and i say that i relation to Maxima. She truly has a big Heart...

Naomi: We still need to explain to the doctors how Flare lost soo much blood but made it, her together with the baby..

Me: That's the least of our worries.. Clive looked at Naomi..

Clive: What do you know Naomi about what attacked my Queen?

Naomi: First of all rule out a demon, because a demon needs to possess a body to express itself..

Maxima: What else do you have in mind? Naomi: i thought of a ghost but..

Me: But?

Naomi: Flare what is spirit cannot hurt you. A ghost can only scare you by moving things around you such as furniture etc

but a ghost cannot physically hurt you. And ghosts extract their powers from an energy source like lights but it's rare for a ghost to physically attack you..

Clive: What could it be?

Naomi: i am still unsure. For the fact that it had that physical connection with flare makes it hard to tell what it is.. Me: book of spells?

Naomi: i consulted that, but no information on the entity

Clive: So we have reached the dead end, my wife and my son are in danger and you cannot do anything about it?

Naomi: We need someone who can be able to see what cannot be seen. Clive: What about Iris?

Naomi: if Flare cannot see that, then Iris is as useless..

Me: What about black magic? Queen Victoria she is seeking revenge.. Naomi: Black magic cannot succeed in creating such evil.

Maxima: Then who is it? Naomi: i am very clueless

If Naomi is clueless then I'm clueless too..

Clive: Naomi can you find out who is doing this? Can you think of anyone?

I looked at Clive and my heart melted. I was soo emotional over the fact that he was even ready to use sorcery to find out what's harming me and his unborn son.. He held my hand again..

Him: i cannot lose my only Family, who ever is trying to hurt my family please find them..

Naomi: i promise sire..

NAOMI

I looked at Flare and Clive how do i even begin to tell them the real thing behind all of this..

The honest truth is as a Guardian everything is always revealed to you especially when it comes to who wanna hurt your charge (witch) that you were assigned to protect,so

that whatever harm comes their way you can protect them...
The Goblin is the one behind this, he created a shadow of himself to be close to Flare. The favour that he wants is to eliminate Clive and marry Flare..

I am trying to defeat him without Flare and sire knowing about this, but the problem is i still need to find good strong witches to help me with this before the Goblin totally consumes Flare and kills Clive..

PART 72

days has passed and i was still at the hospital, Clive wanted doctors to keep me there because at this moment with the unknown entity roaming around the Royal house, he found the hospital much safer.....

I was laying on the bed, and he was sitting beside me with his hand running on my tummy.. Me: i still can't believe that he survived what happened..

Clive: He is stronger than i thought.

Me: When am i getting out of here? I miss home.. Him: You know home is not safe for you..

Me: So i am forever gonna be stuck here?

Him: No just until Naomi finds out what's going on and how we can fight off this entity, then you can come home..

That was very sad to hear, i just wanna be home surrounded by people who love me.. Him: ive lost you once i don't wanna loose you again..

I put my hand ontop his.. Me: i know...

Him: You haven't eaten today, don't you want something to eat? Me: We are pretty hungry

Clive: I'll go get you something..

He stood up and when he was about to approach the door, Maxima and Charlie walked in.. Clive: What the hell is he doing here?

Me: Clive..

Clive looked at Charlie..

Clive: You are not welcome here! Charlie: Flare is my friend

Clive: Yeah whatever..

He started pushing him towards the door, and they both exited.. Maxima came up to me. Maxima: Why does he have to act like that?

She sat down..

Me: You know how Clive is sweet

Her: Guess his gonna kill him when he hears that Charlie and i we in a relationship.. Me: Just give him time..

Her: We'll see about that...Anyway how are you?

Me: I'm getting there, just can't wait to be out of this place..

Maxima: Ya just have to wait for Naomi to find out about our strange person.. Me: Maybe if i could get out of here I'll help

Maxima: You are not leaving this place until we know that you are no longer in danger.. Ever since i found out about Zoe and who she is, her departure left a void in my heart but having Maxima around she filled that void..

Me: Clive has been forever gone to get us something to eat..

Maxima: Do you want me to go and check on him?

Me: if it's not much trouble..

She stood up and went to get Clive

It took 10min for them to come back with the food. Me: That took long

Clive: Sorry i got held up somewhere

I could see that Maxima was very disturbed by Clive's presence they looked like they weren't getting along at all i could feel the tension in the atmosphere..

Maxima: Flare I'll see you tomorrow Me: Okay

She came and hugged me..

Clive: Before you go, what's your relationship with that fucker Charlie? Maxima: Pardon?

Clive: You heard me

I was a bit scared of Clive finding out about Maxima's relationship with Charlie, especially because he doesn't like Charlie..

Clive: You two walked in here walking side by side like a couple, what is going on? Maxima looked at him, she was hurt. All Clive does this days is to just repeatedly hurt her..

Maxima: We nothing

Clive: it better be nothing..

She looked at me then smiled, and then she walked away.. I

looked at Clive.. Me: Why you always have to treat her like that?

He sat down.

Him: i do not want that guy to always win.. Me: win what?

You don't even love Maxima

Him: That doesn't Matter i just don't want Charlie to keep on winning.. I had to compete with him for you and Zoe now you want him to take Maxima?

Me: Sometimes you very unreasonable..

Him: if i found out that they seeing each other, she is going back to the Netherlands.. Me: Whatever Clive

I put the food away..

Him: You not gonna eat? Me: ive just lost my appetite.

Him: Well i know something that will excite you.. I looked at him, he started to look a bit nervous.. Me: What's wrong?

He reached down to his pocket and took out a ring. It was a beautiful Ruby ring..

Him: i found it in my mother's room when i was going through her things. I think she wanted me to find it..

When he says mother he is actually referring to Queen Basheeba.. Him: i want you to wear it as an engagement

ring..

He slipped it through my finger and it was a perfect fit...

Him: i thought of giving it to maxima because she is the first wife, but i thought that i should give it to the one I love..

I was honored to be wearing Queen Basheeba's ring.. I saw something glowing by the door i looked over and Queen

Basheeba appeared and stood by the door. She was wearing a white Sari she looked very beautiful, she just stood there and smiled at me till she vanished..

Clive: Flare..

I looked at him

Him: Who were you smiling at? Me: Just a friendly ghost of mine Him: You have ghost friends?

I nodded my head... Him: That's interesting. He held my hand.

Him: i love you and i cannot wait to marry you.. Me: i love you too

He stood up and came to kiss me.. # NAOMI

I had gone to get Iris, i started this Goblin journey with her and together we must end it... The sisters didn't give me a hard time, they agreed to borrow me her for a few days. But then i had to swear under oath that i will protect her and bring her back safe of which i didn't hesitate to do

After dropping some of her clothes at the Royal house we went to find the Goblin at his cave

We got there, and he wasn't around, Instead we found this young good looking tall man.. He was very charming i won't lie that even Iris couldn't stop drooling over him..

Me: Excuse me

He came closer to us..

Iris: Ohh my goodness take me now

He looked at her and laughed.. His annoying laughter gave him away that it's the Goblin, Iris smile quickly Vanished..

Me: How did you manage to look this good?

Him: i am a Goblin i am good at tricks. I tricked a few witches to cast the beauty spell on me and guess what it worked..

Me: We are here to tell you to stay away from Flare He laughed again..

Him: Unfortunately I did tell you that I will need a favour one day.. Iris: This favour is too much

Him: Well then too bad... Me: We will vanquish you He laughed..

Him: i wish you could, see i have powers now Me: powers?

He lifted up his hand and sent me and Iris flying across the cave..

He then whistled, this ugly scary creatures like the ones on the movie the descendant came to us..we were moving backwards while still on the ground....

Goblin: they blind,they only sense you by movement and sound...i promise you they very fast and they will reap you apart.. To be safe be still.. And as for me, i am going to get my Versini Queen...

He started walking out leaving us there in panic and fear..

PART 73

[EVIL SHALL NOT REIGN]

Clive had gone home to bath and change. He has been here by my side everyday that i literally forced him to go and change

It was in the afternoon and i had just finished showering, the nurse came and helped me get in bed..

Nurse: Are you comfortable? Me: Yes i am

My baby boy started kicking..

Me: He likes thinking that I am his soccer ball.. She put her hand on my tummy..

Her: That is a strong kick. You really have a strong healthy baby Me: i do don't i?

Her: True that.. Can i get you something? Me: No.. I'll be fine thank you

I yawned..

Her: is that your way of trying to kick me out? I chuckled..

Me: No we usually take our nap at this time..

Nurse: Okay then your highness i will come back and check up on you later.. Me: Thank you

She walked out of the ward and i tried to sleep..

My son was having a soccer match of his own inside my tummy that i couldn't sleep.. I then sat up straight.

Me: What's wrong, you don't wanna sleep today?

That was very odd because we usually take our nap at this time.. I heard a knock at the door i looked over and it was Charlie.. Him: may i?

I smiled at him..

Me: Ofcourse you may come in..

He walked in.. Then sat down on the bench.. Him: How are you?

Me: i am very fine and you? Him: Im good..

I could see that something was bothering him.. Him: How is

the baby?

I ran my hand on my tummy with a big smile on my face..

Me: He is fine..

Him: i am happy that you and the baby are fine.. Me: What's wrong?

He looked at me... Him: Huh?

Me: i can see that something is in your mind, what's wrong?

He put his hand on his face for a while and then looked at me.. Him: You know how much i love you..

Me: And i love you too, you've always been like a brother to me..

Him: Yeah like that..

I really don't understand the point that Charlie is trying to make. Me: You scaring Me Charlie.

He kept quiet and looked down.. Me: Out with it already!

Him: Maxima and i we eloping!

I looked at him with soo much confusion written on my face..

Him: We eloping tonight..

Me: What? Charlie no!

Him: im inlove with you Flare, but unfortunately you inlove with someone else... Seeing you with him just kills me inside.

I have tried to be strong about this, but i can't anymore...

Me: What are you trying to tell me? He stood up..

Him: I really didn't want it to come to this..

This was hard for him, the same way that it was hard for me..

He came and hugged me.

Him: i love you Flare

He then kissed me on my forehead and started walking away, i held his hand but he loosened the grip.

Me: Charlie no!!

I was crying, i was hurt.. Charlie is the only friend i know and Maxima is more like a sister to me. Having them permanently extracted from my life is something i am not prepared for...

NAOMI

We have been sitting there for quite a while now, not moving, not saying a word. We couldn't even breath that loud, that's how difficult our situation was..

Those things were alot, if they can get to us they surely will reap us apart...

We slowly turned and looked at each other. With me they cannot kill me, i can only be killed by black magic from a black Guardian my biggest concern was Iris.....

Iris: What are we gonna do? (Whispering)

Goblin was right those things were very good that before i knew it one made its way to Iris but when she kept quiet, it stopped right next to her..

I could see fear written all over her she was even sweating.. I

was trying to think of a plan, but no plan hit my mind

Then something unexpected happened, i saw flames being thrown right at those creatures and they started burning, that could only mean one thing. The Inferno Queen is

here... We slowly got up and ran out of there as those creatures were burning to Ashes with Zoe behind us..

Zoe: Are you guys okay?

We were trying to catch our breaths.. I looked over at Iris she had her hands on her knees and was trying to breath...

Me: Yes we fine, thank you

Iris: long live the Inferno Queen, such and honour to meet you.. Zoe: You welcome dear..

Me: How do we deal with the Goblin? You here to help us right? Zoe: That's your situation unfortunately i cannot help you with that... She handed me the devil's claw plant...

Her: You might need this though... I took it...

Me: Thank you

Her: You welcome.. I have to go

Me: Thank you again for coming into our rescue.. Iris: Thank you for saving us...

Her: Anytime

A tunnel opened up and she went inside of it, then after it vanished.. I looked at Iris...

Me: Let's go get that crook Iris: Let's go

We started walking back to the house with her hand on my shoulder.. Her: i need a holiday after this..

Naomi: Same here We walked home... # FLARE

I must've cried myself to sleep, all i wanted to do was sleep the pain away and not wake up. I still cannot believe that Charlie will not be in my life anymore, that just killed me inside..

I sat up straight and just started thinking about this whole ordeal.. As i was crying, i heard someone saying something....

Voice: One would swear that your tears are sincere

I looked at the door and it was Queen Victoria. She was wearing a hospital gown. She looked to be recovering from the minor stroke..

Me: What are you doing here?

She walked in and i was starting to get scared because in my pregnant state, i am very vulnerable to whatever she's gonna do to me..

Her: i gave you a job, i accepted you as if like you were my own daughter and this is how you repay me?

I could feel the evil lingering in the atmosphere. Victoria's rage is giving birth to destructive evil..

Me: You brought this upon yourself!

I wanted to get out of bed, but i couldn't, the sides of my bed were locked restricting me from getting off..

She made her way to me..

Her: Today you are gonna die you witch!!!! Same way that you have killed me inside She was strangling me, i swear Victoria was stronger than i anticipated especially for someone who suffered a stroke.. I tried reaching for the button but i couldn't i tried to fight her off but she was really

strong...

Her: i want my face to be the last face you see before you die! I couldn't do nothing at that moment i had to accept death..

As i was slowly suffocating and about to pass out with her laughing and enjoying every moment, i then heard someone speaking..

Voice: Leave my daughter in law and my son to live a happy peaceful life!!!!

Victoria let go of me, we looked over and it was Queen Basheeba, she was wearing her pure white Sarie and this time she was glowing.. I was sitting there coughing and trying to catch my breath..

Basheeba: i will not let you destroy them or bother them anymore!!

Queen Basheeba looked at Victoria, the same Garden Incident took place again where Victoria looked like she was having a heart attack.. She couldn't breath was like she was choking in her own vomit. She went down and tried to fight what was happening but after a while she gave in and wasn't moving anymore.. I saw her spirit living her body, then the ground opened up and what seemed to be Hell appeared.. The flames were waiting to swallow her...

Victoria: Noooooooooo..

She went inside there, then the floor closed up..

A huge black stain was left on the ground and her lifeless body was there too.. Basheeba looked at me and smiled.. I knew that was the end of Queen Victoria..

PART 74

I was a bit concerned that when Queen Victoria's body was found in my ward i would be charged with murder, but after a medical examiner did an Autopsy he did find that the cause of death was a heart attack. Judging from the marks on my neck, the police did believe that Queen Victoria did try to harm me

I was back at home since Naomi told us that i will be safe the Shadow won't show up again like Queen Victoria to harm me..

I was very happy to be home because i really don't like hospitals..

Unfortunately for me Charlie and Queen Maxima did elope i had no idea of their whereabouts, and after learning about them eloping Clive made it his number one priority to pursue them. He sent out Guards to look for them and alerted other countries that they fugitives

Clive and i we were planning our engagement party. The whole Town knew about it, other Queens and Kings from different countries were invited to come and attend our engagement party..

We had to go all out in making everything not just good but perfect....

Our engagement was announced on the newspapers, TV channels, magazines and pamphlets. I never thought that a mere engagement could be this big, i mean if an engagement could be this big then what about our wedding??..

I was sitting at the garden under our big tree and starring at one of the magazines where they had announced our engagement..

It's amazing how life is, i mean one moment i was just a servant running after the Royal family and today my face is splashed all over as the Queen of Callanine....

My ward Gwen came to me as i was looking at my picture with Clive while eating peaches.. Gwen: Your highness She bowed after saying that, showing her respect.. I looked at her.

Her: Sire said i must ask you if you ready to go and collect your gowns...

Clive's Great Grandmother was supposed to visit a few days ago, but because of a few things she couldn't come so she was gonna come tomorrow..

Me: i forgot about that, but we will go.. Gwen: Yes your highness

I looked at her as she was looking down.. Me: Gwen She bowed again.. Her: Yes her majesty?

Me: Do you know how to read?

Her: Unfortunately i don't know how to read and write your highness.. Me: So who is gonna read what's written about me in the papers? She chuckled...

Her: Forgive me your highness but i don't know.. I chuckled too..

Me: So sad that us servants can't read or write..

Her: Forgive me, but her majesty is not a servant anymore she is a Queen.. Me: i might be a Queen but just like you i was once a servant...

I stood up..

Me: You know something Gwen.. Her: Yes her majesty the Queen?

Me: Never look down upon yourself, never undermine yourself... Her: Yes her majesty

Me: Who knows, one day you might be married to a well off doctor.. Her: Yes majesty.

I look at Gwen and i remember when i was in her shoes, bowing to the king&Queen together with Sophia&Clive. I remember having to leave my sister sleeping sister Zoe at 6am and attending to the Royal family. I remember Queen

Victoria treating me like i am nothing, i remember her treating me like i am just rubbish that you throw away in the trash bin, or trash in the dumping site that smelled so Terrible....

Gwen: Your highness..

She brought me back from my deep thoughts with that statement...

Gwen: is her majesty alright?

Me: Yes i am Gwen.. Let's take a walk in the garden.. We started walking around the garden..

Me: You know Gwen turn a blind eye and a deaf ear when people insult you, when people hurt you, or when people undermine you. Just look at me, not so long ago i was a royal servant but now i am the Queen of Callanine..

Her: Yes her majesty..

Me: When people undermine you or look down on you laugh at that, because those very same people will soon bow to you..

Her: Those are very wise words your highness... Me: And dwell on my words..

As we were walking, at a far distance i saw Clive Standing with a young gentleman.. Me: Who is that young man standing with Clive?

Her: That is Christopher Your highness, he is the King's servant.. Me: i have never seen him before..

Gwen: Sire got him today Me: Ohw..

That was weird, for Clive not to tell me that we have a male servant.. Gwen and i made our way to them.

Clive: and what do you know, here comes my Queen..

He put his hand around my big tummy and kissed my forehead.. Clive: Malady meet Christopher he is my personal servant..

I looked at him and he was the most charming and cutest thing i have ever seen.. He took my hand and kissed it..

Him: Malady such an hour to finally meet you.. I was very taken by this young man...

Me: pleasure knowing you Christopher.. Where are you from? Him: i am from the caves her majesty

Me: Ohw..

Him: Congratulations on your engagement He looked at Clive..

Him: He is not lucky but blessed to have you..

I swear this young man was something i have never seen..

Clive: You can go and polish my boots.. Gwen please give him my boots Gwen: Yes Sire..

Gwen looked at Christopher.. Gwen: This way Christopher. They both went, with Christopher following Gwen and winking at Me.. After they had left i looked at Clive

Me: He is such a charming Young man Clive put his hand on my big tummy again..

Clive: Yeah but there's something i just don't get about him..

Me: What is that?

Clive: Just something weird about him..

Me: You always thinking the worst of people.. Him: Maybe i am right about those people..

Me: Anyway why don't you read what's written about us..i handed him the magazine..

He took it and looked at the cover photo of us on the front page then handed the magazine to me..

Him: For a change why don't you read for me?

That's a turn of event.. I didn't expect such a statement from Clive especially because he always read for me..

PART 75

I took the magazine from him and looked at it for a while. Why was Clive doing this to me? Why was he humiliating me like this?. My heart sank, my throat became dry that i even felt a lump on my throat when i was trying to swallow.. tears started nearing, but i tried my level best to hold them back.. I looked at him then threw the magazine hard and on his face then i started walking away... Him: ouch! I was truly hurt at what he did.. Him: Flare!! He was running after me until he caught up with me and grabbed me by my arm.. Him: Im sorry Me: Just leave me alone Clive! I yanked his hand off my arm, and Walked away to Sit alone In the garden chairs.. I was crying, my heart was truly broken.

After a while of me crying i heard someone clearing their throat, i looked up and it was Christopher i quickly wiped my tears..

Him: Can i sit? Me: Yes..

He sat down next to me he was holding a newspaper..

Him: is it what they wrote about you Malady in the papers that's making you cry like this?

Me: i haven't read the papers.

I'm just hoping he doesn't hand me the newspaper.... Him: They had alot to say

Me: Like what?

Him: i don't think you wanna hear this, it is really bad.. Me: i have heard worse, so out with it..

Him: They wrote all kinds of filth about you Malady. How you slept your way into being a Queen of Callanine, how much you don't deserve to be a Queen. They saying Maxima could even make a better Queen than her majesty..

Me: They really wrote that? Him: Yes but it gets worse.. Me: What?

Him: They saying that a close source told them that you are a witch!!

That statement took me by surprise literally that my baby started kicking.. My heart was in my throat now, i was very scared..

Could it be that Maxima and Charlie Told the papers about my secret? No they wouldn't betray me like that, i mean i.. They.. They just wouldn't i trust them with my heart..

I stood up my urine was burning my bladder, my knees were weak and wobbly.. Chris: Is Malady alright?

He stood up and held me.. Me: i just feel a bit dizzy..

Him: Let's get you inside the house Malady..

I looked at him, and he also looked at me our eyes locked and before i knew it we were kissing...

I broke the kiss after a while, after my senses had came back and i realised that what I was doing was wrong.. Chris:

Malady i..

Me: i have to go

I quickly rushed to the house...

I went straight into my bedroom and started pacing up and down..

Me: Flare what are you.. Flare what are you.. Flare what are you doing??

This is not me, i don't know what happened back there but i am not the one to go and just kiss random guys.. I am not a slut never was and i am not going to start today..

I sat down on the bed trying to think about what i have done... # NAOMI

Iris and i we were in the chamber trying to go through the book of spells, finding the right spell to vanquish this Goblin before he breaks Clive and Flare up..

Iris: I'm tired now Naomi

I was walking up and down thinking very deep and hard. Why would Zoe give me the Devil's claw plant and said I'm gonna need it??

Iris: Naomi?

I was still thinking, i mean a Goblin is a crook and full of tricks. I am a Guardian i have lived many years i should be able to know more on how to Vanquish this Goblin..

I felt someone touching me, i looked back and it was Iris.. Iris: i have been calling you..

Me: Sorry what were you saying? Iris: i am saying that..

She looked at me. Iris: Are you okay?

Me: This thing with the Goblin really troubles me..

Iris: it would be more helpful if you could try to be engaging with me in this situation so we know how to get read of this thing..

Me: I am Engaging..

The door of the chamber opened, and Christopher walked in... Him: i thought you two would be done and eaten..

We looked at him..

Me: wouldn't that make you happy? He laughed..

Him: Hmmmm the book of spells, trying to vanquish me? Iris: We not trying we will vanquish you.

Him: Ya i don't know about that, i mean Flare thinks that her secret is out, she thinks that Callanine hates her, she's gonna suspect everyone close to her of going to the papers and blurring out her secret..

Iris: You pathetic!!

Him: Give up, Flare has tasted the lips of death.. She is mine now.

We looked at him with that smirk on his face. All of a sudden Iris went and kicked him hard that he almost fell but only took a few steps backwards..

Me: Wow where you learn that? Iris: been doing karate all my life Chris looked at her..

Him: Pretty impressive miss Iris, kick me all you want but that won't stop Flare from seeing all of you as traitors! Now that he tricked Flare, this situation just got tougher.

PART 76

[FINALE-PART 1]

I was tossing and turning, i couldn't sleep my mind was constantly thinking about Christopher. It was more like he had a hold of me.. I woke up and got out of bed, i could hear him calling me with his faint voice...

Me: Chris..

The house was very quiet and dark as i made my way downstairs, to the back door that leads to the garden....

He was standing there, waiting for me...

I opened the sliding door and made my way to him... Chris:

My Queen

Me: My King

I walked up to him and he held my hands then planted a kiss on my lips which made my knees to be weak...

Me: When are we finally going to be together? Him: Soon my Queen...

My heart yearns more and more for his love...

Him: There's just one person who we need to get rid off before we can be together... He starts staring deep into my eyes.

Him: You must kill Sire.

I am a bit shaken by what his saying to me right now..

He stares deep into my eyes again, and this time around it feels like he is hypnotising me..

Him: Kill Sire.. You must kill Sire... I find myself repeating his words. Me: i must kill Sire.. I must kill Sire

He then smiles at me, but his focus moves from me to something else..

Him: Someone Is coming my Queen, i have to go we cannot be seen together as yet..

He comes and plants a kiss one more time on my lips.. Him: i love you..

Me: i lo..

Before i could finish saying the words he sets off to his cottage. Me: Wait..

As i am fully concentrated on the direction that he took to go to his cottage, i then hear someone clearing their throat.. I turned around and saw Clive standing there... Him: What are you doing standing here alone at night?

I just look at him without saying a word... He starts taking a few steps towards me..

Him: You still upset about what happened earlier this morning? He then holds my hands...

Him: i didn't mean to upset you like that, i am sorry..

I could see that his apology is sincere, but then the words come back and keep on playing in my head "Kill Sire"..

Me: Kill Sire..

He looks at me dumbfounded.. Him: What?

Me: i must kill Sire.. I must kill Sire..

He then puts his hands on my cheeks and looks at me straight in the eye..

Him: What's gotten into you?

Me: i must kill Sire.. I must kill Sire..

He exhales then takes my hand and we start walking inside the house..

#NAOMI

I am sitting in my room at the small table with the book of spells in front of me. I have been through it alot of times, but still can't find the right spell..

I turn over on my side and Iris is sleeping peacefully she also has been of great help in this whole situation....

I turn over again and start paging through the book of spells maybe this time around i will find something

As i am sitting there trying to find something i then hear a knock at the door. I look at the time and it's 23:00, who

could that be so late??

I slowly get up from the chair and made my way to the door...

When i get there, i unlock and open to my surprise it's Sire and Flare they make their way in while i close the door.. I then attend to them Sire looks a bit concerned....

Me: Sire what's the matter? Him: Look at Flare..

I look at Flare, and from that instant i can tell that she is not herself something is wrong with her..

Flare: i must kill Sire.. I must kill Sire Clive: See what I mean..

I wish i can come up with a lie in this situation to cover up for the truth but, it's best i just tell him the truth...

Me: Remember when Flare was dying? Him: Yes?

Iris and i set out to find help. We needed time to be reversed so that we could save Flare because she was already dead..

Him: Flare was never dead..

Me: You won't remember because time has been reversed, memories of that day have been wiped off..

I slowly made my way to the book of spells..

Me: The only person or thing that could reverse time was a Goblin... Clive: a Goblin, that ugly tricky thing?

Me: Yes.. We went to him and he reversed time, we bribed him with Gold coins but, that wasn't enough he told us that he would want a favour someday..

Him: What favour?

Me: i didn't know at first, but his favour is to kill you and marry Flare. He has possessed Flare with the deadly kiss..

Clive: What do you mean by that? Where is he? Me: He disguised himself as Chris...

Him: You telling me that Chris the servant has kissed and touched my fiancé? I nodded..

His Anger started to build up.. Him: Im going to kill him!

He started walking to the door.. Me: Sire wait..

He stopped and looked at me..

Him: Wait for what Naomi? This thing is taking control of my Queen..

Me: i understand but if you kill him you will lose Flare forever her heart belongs to him for now...

He looked at Flare then calmed himself... Him: So what's the plan?

Me: i am still going to find a spell to vanquish him.. In the meantime Time let's put Flare into a deep sleep so she can't kill you..

I went to my drawers and got the Hyaena's tail..

Me: burn this and bring it closer to her nose, but Cover yours so you don't fall into a deep sleep...

He took the tail and looked at it, then looked at me.. Him: better find that spell fast or you dead!

He took Flare and they went...

I went back and sat at the table.. Me: Naomi you can get something..

I started paging through again but still nothing.. I won't lie i was very devastated, frustrated and stressed. i laid my head on the book of spells..

As i was laying my head on the book of spells, i heard a voice filling up the room.... Voice: You been looking at this the wrong way..

I looked around and there was no one.. Me: Who are you?

Voice: the only thing that can break the spell is true love...

Me: How?

Voice: Flare needs to find the love she once felt for Clive that's the only way you gonna kill the Goblin..

I thought for a while..

Me: You are right, true love can break the spell.. But how do i ignite such from Flare? Voice: make Flare realise her true love for Sire..

Me: Who are you?

Voice: I am the one who brought them together, i am Cupid..

Wow why didn't i think of that???

I sat there thinking of a way to ignite the love that Flare once felt for Clive...I then saw the book of spells paging itself to the devil's claw passage, i read through.. Me: "The Devil's claw plant has the power to awake what is sleeping"
That's my answer right there so that's why Zoe gave me the plant...

#FLARE

It was a beautiful sunny and peaceful morning, the birds were making noise and the sun was shining bright.. I had just finished bathing, now i was making my way to the dinning area where i have to share breakfast with a bunch of traitors, yes they betrayed me by going to the papers and blurring out my secret of being a witch....

I got there and everyone was gathered around the table, looked like they were waiting for me..

Naomi: Good morning Flare

She was smiling at me, that smile of betrayal.. I went and sat down..

Iris: Fruit salad?

I looked at her she was smiling too as she dished up for me..

Clive: How did you sleep?

I didn't say anything..

Iris: Here is your salad, enjoy your highness....

I took the bowl and looked at it, everyone was looking at me waiting for me to at least

take one bite, but i didn't i put the bowl down.. Naomi:
What's wrong?

Me: i can't eat with a bunch of traitors... Clive: What?

Me: You heard me.. I stood up..

Clive: What's that about Naomi?

Me: all of you must know that I am leaving with Chris, i cannot sit here and share a meal with people who went and told the paparazzi about my secret...

Iris: Wow!

Clive: That's crazy you not going anywhere.. Me: i am going
Clive!

He stood up and held my arm..

Him: You not going anywhere, now stop this madness!!

We were busy shouting at each other, he was also pulling me back preventing me from leaving. Iris and Naomi were saying a bunch of things to prevent me from going..

Voice: Let go of her....

It was Christopher he walked in.. Me: My love

Him: My Queen Clive: Flare..

I looked at him...

Clive: Don't do this to me..

His sincere look started to make me realise our love..

Christopher: Don't listen to him Flare you belong to me! I looked at Christopher..

Me: i belong to you.. Clive: No!

They were confusing me, all those mixed feelings were now making me dizzy i didn't know who i was supposed to fall for..

Iris made her way to me with a glass of juice.. Naomi: Stop what you doing, you making her sick!

Her: drink this, i put grape fruits inside it will make you feel better..

I took it and drank it, then i closed my eyes for a while holding on to the table... Naomi: Well is it working?

Iris: i hope so, I put the devil's claw in the juice...
I then opened my eyes after a while and looked at Christopher, he looked a bit concerned..

Him: My Queen

He stretched out his hand to me.. Me: Go to hell!!

After saying that he started screaming while putting his hand where his heart was, he was starting to melt too as if like we poured him with a vanquishing portion.. After a minute or so what was left of him was just a black liquid on the floor, the Goblin was gone forever...

Iris: We did it!!

Iris and Naomi were busy jumping up and down with excitement.. I then looked at Clive, he smiled at me...

Him: Come here

I went up to him and we kissed with Naomi and Iris cheering us up..

PART 77

12 MONTHS LATER

I can feel my palms starting to sweat, my heart was doing beats of its own. I am happy and scared at the same time, in less than 30 seconds I'll be having all the Royal eyes on me. Queens, Kings, princesses, and Princes all over are here to celebrate this day with me, they are here to honour, me Flare versini who was just a mere servant not so long ago... I glanced down and looked at that bouquet of flowers, i then looked at my dress... Zoe: You will be fine..

I look at her and she smiles at me. Zoe will be walking me down that long aisle... Me: Is my hair okay?

Her: Your hair is perfect.. Tears start streaming down..

Zoe: No Flare don't start please you gonna make me cry too..

Today i am marrying Clive, not only am i marrying him but I'll also be crowned the Queen of Callanine..

Me: Who would've thought that today you and i we'll be Queens..

Zoe: i never thought of that too, Me the Queen of the Inferno people, and you Queen of Callanine..

The Royal guard disturbs us by coming to us... Him: Malady everyone is ready for you..

Zoe: This is it.. Me: This is it..

Zoe: Are you ready?

I nod my head, although i am very nervous..

She holds my hand and we start walking down the Aisle..

The church must've had around 150 Royals gathered there to witness and share this moment with us..

The walk to Clive is the longest, but i cannot wait to get there.. They all stand up and look at me as Zoe walks me down the Aisle..

Alot has changed in that period of 12 months. I had given birth to an adorable baby Boy we Named him Raphael White

the 2nd, we named him after Clive's Great grandfather...I was also taking a few classes i was being taught how to read&write, and things in Callanine have never been this peaceful...

Unfortunately Charlie and Maxima were nowhere to be found, I'm just hoping that one day they will come back.. I finally get to Clive, he is standing while holding Raphael who is now sleeping on his chest. I am very blessed to have this 2 people in my life...

Father Luther is standing right next to us, he is the one who is going to Wed us... F. Luther: We can all sit down..

They sat down.

Father: We are all gathered here to witness the holy matrimony of Flare Versini and Prince Clive white..

"Flare Versini" i never thought that name would be said in Callanine without me being hanged on burnt to Ashes..

Father Luther went on to bless the ceremony, he read a certain scripture from the Bible and also prayed before getting into the core of the ceremony. I was just standing there praying that i don't faint because i was very nervous with all those eyes starring at me..

Father: i believe the couple have written their own vows.. He looked at Clive...

Father: You can start..

Clive looked at me.

Clive: Flare, a few years ago you came across as a mere servant not in a million years did i think that we would be standing here today. I loved you from the very moment when i laid my eyes on you, i knew then, that you were the right woman for me.. I couldn't think of anyone else who would make a great Queen and a great wife than you. I love you Flare Versini, andi promise to always treat you with respect, to love and cherish you forever...

I was already in tears when he finished saying that, i could

also see tears in his eyes.. Father Luther looked at me...

Me: Clive when i first met you my job was to serve you for the rest of my life. I was just a servant whom everyone looked down on and despised.. Out of everyone in the Royal house you and Sophia didn't see me as a servant, Sophia saw me more as a friend and you wanted to know the real me and not the servant part of me.. Our love was a mission, our love was always tested especially me being a Versini and you coming from a family that hates my family, but here we are we went against all odds to show everyone that we cannot help who we fall in love with.. I love you Clive, and i promise to respect you, to love and cherish you forever..

I then looked around and most people were in tears now..

Father Luther: Can we have the rings..

They brought the rings. His was just a white Gold wedding band, mine was a white gold diamond ring...we put the rings on.

F. Luther: may this rings be a symbol of your love to each other. May this rings remind you two of where you come from, and where you are now. I now Pronounce you husband and wife, you may kiss the bride..

He came closer and kissed me with everyone cheering us, clapping hands and made noise...

I thought that this was gonna be a quick ceremony, but it took longer than expected. After being Wed, another ceremony was performed where we were crowned King&Queen of Callanine by the Royal elder.. Everything was just perfect at some point i thought that everything was a dream, maybe someone will wake me up, but it wasn't a dream.....

When we were done, we went to the balcony were every citizen of Callanine was waiting for us on the road and other foreign correspondents, they filled the whole Road there was no much space.. They were standing standing there

making noise screaming they love us, some had posters written "We love you Flare"

It was just overwhelming, very overwhelming.. I am not just Flare anymore but i am Queen Flare white....

.....**The End**.....

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>